

**CIHM  
Microfiche  
Series  
(Monographs)**

**ICMH  
Collection de  
microfiches  
(monographies)**



**Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques**

**© 2000**

The  
cop  
may  
the  
sig  
che



This  
Ce

10





The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

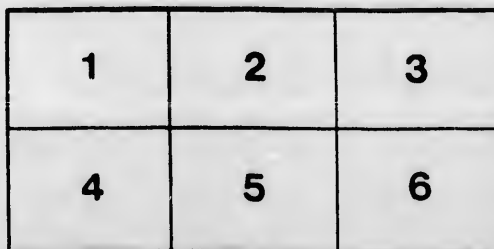
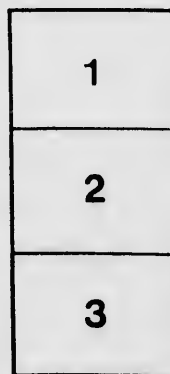
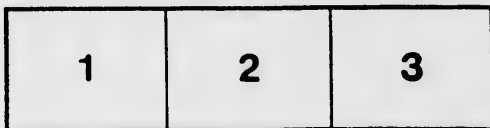
Ontario Institute for Studies In Education  
University of Toronto

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol  $\rightarrow$  (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol  $\nabla$  (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:



L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

Ontario Institute for Studies in Education  
University of Toronto

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

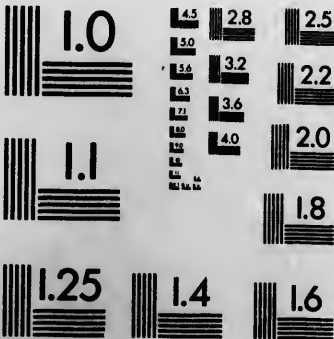
Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole  $\rightarrow$  signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole  $\nabla$  signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.

# MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)



**APPLIED IMAGE Inc**

1653 East Main Street  
Rochester, New York 14609 USA  
(716) 482 - 0300 - Phone  
(716) 288 - 5989 - Fax



az/bi  
mca/s



glau-benairc

az/s  
Pardon at ...  
...  
...



283

Presented to  
The Library of  
The Ontario College of  
Education  
The University of Toronto  
by

Mrs. John D. Murray

ELI

Adap

EX

*Louvain S*

THE  
PUBLIC SCHOOL  
ELEMENTARY FRENCH GRAMMAR

PART I.—ACCIDENCE

By AUGUSTE BRACHET

Adapted for the use of English Schools and Persons engaged in  
Elementary Teaching

BY

THE REV. P. H. E. BRETTE, B.D.

HEAD-MASTER OF THE FRENCH SCHOOL, CHRIST'S HOSPITAL

AND

GUSTAVE MASSON, B.A.

ASSISTANT MASTER AND LIBRARIAN, HARROW SCHOOL,

EXAMINERS IN THE UNIVERSITY OF LONDON



JAMES CAMPBELL & SON.

1878.

[All rights reserved.]

Entered according to the Act of the Parliament of Canada, in the  
year one thousand eight hundred and seventy-eight, by JAMES  
CAMPBELL & SON, in the office of the Minister of Agriculture.

40725

84/5/48

## PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION.

---

THE adapted translation of M. Brachet's "Nouvelle Grammaire Française," published by us at the beginning of the year, and which has been received with such signal success, was intended to meet the wants of pupils belonging to our ordinary Grammar Schools. On the present occasion, we address ourselves to those with whom philological details, and discussions of etymological or scientific problems would be completely out of place.

M. Brachet's "Petite Grammaire" simply gives the various rules both of accidence and of syntax, without attempting to enter into explanations which beginners nine or ten years old could not possibly understand. We have adopted the same method, but introduced into the work all modifications necessary for making our "ELEMENTARY FRENCH GRAMMAR" a practical and useful book for English class-rooms. Each section is followed by a set of questions and by exercises which should be written out and committed to memory after they have been corrected.

In many instances the Accidence alone is required for examination purposes; accordingly we have thought it best to print the Grammar in two distinct parts, containing, respectively, the Accidence and the Syntax, each part being followed by

34/2/98

a complete English-French and French-English Vocabulary. As the translation of the "Nouvelle Grammaire Française" is now adopted in most of our English Grammar and Preparatory Schools, so the "Petite Grammaire," by its cheapness and completeness, will commend itself to School Boards and Persons engaged in elementary teaching.

It gives us much pleasure to acknowledge the valuable assistance which Mr. E. JANAU, French Master at Blackheath Proprietary School, has given us in preparing the present volume.

---

#### PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION.

THE sale of several thousand copies of this little work in less than six months is a sufficient proof that it has met a want felt by the persons for whom it was chiefly designed. The present edition, thoroughly revised and corrected, is accompanied by a very complete French-English and English-French Vocabulary, arranged by Mr. A. DUPUIS, B.A., First French Master at King's College School, to whom we have to tender our thanks for his kind assistance; beginners will thus be spared the necessity of referring to separate dictionaries.

We take the opportunity of reminding our friends that a supplementary set of Exercises on the Accidence and the Syntax will be ready very shortly,

P. H. ERNEST BRETTE.  
GUSTAVE MASSON.

March, 1877.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

## INTRODUCTION.

|   | PAGE |
|---|------|
| Preliminary Remarks on the History and Geography of<br>the French Language ... .. | 1    |
| Object and Definition of Grammar ... ..   | 3    |

## BOOK I.—STUDY OF LETTERS.

### CHAPTER I.

|                                      |    |
|--------------------------------------|----|
| Of the French Alphabet ... ..        | 7  |
| SECTION I.—Of the Vowels ... ..      | 8  |
| SECTION II.—Of the Consonants ... .. | 11 |

### CHAPTER II.

|   |    |
|---|----|
| Of Syllables.—Orthographic Signs ... .. | 14 |
|---|----|

## BOOK II.—STUDY OF WORDS.

### CHAPTER I.

|   |    |
|---|----|
| Of the Noun or Substantive ... ..             | 18 |
| SECTION I.—Of Gender in Nouns ... ..          | 19 |
| SECTION II.—Of Number in Nouns ... ..         | 20 |
| SECTION III.—Formation of Substantives ... .. | 23 |

### CHAPTER II.

|                       |    |
|-----------------------|----|
| Of the Article ... .. | 22 |
|-----------------------|----|

### CHAPTER III.

|   |    |
|---|----|
| Of the Adjective ... ..                                   | 24 |
| SECTION I.—Formation of the Feminine of Adjectives ... .. | 25 |
| SECTION II.—Formation of the Plural of Adjectives ... ..  | 29 |

|  |    |
|--|----|
| SECTION III.—Of the Degrees of Signification in Adjectives | 40 |
| SECTION IV.—Formation of Adjectives                        | 42 |
| SECTION V.—Agreement of the Adjective with the Substantive | 45 |
| SECTION VI.—Determinative Adjectives                       | 45 |
| I. Numeral Adjectives                                      | 45 |
| Comparative Table of the Numeral Adjectives...             | 47 |
| II. Demonstrative Adjectives                               | 49 |
| III. Possessive Adjectives                                 | 50 |
| SECTION VII.—Indefinite Adjectives                         | 52 |

## CHAPTER IV.

|                                    |    |
|------------------------------------|----|
| Of the Pronoun                     | 53 |
| SECTION I.—Personal Pronouns       | 54 |
| SECTION II.—Demonstrative Pronouns | 58 |
| SECTION III.—Possessive Pronouns   | 59 |
| SECTION IV.—Relative Pronouns      | 61 |
| SECTION V.—Indefinite Pronouns     | 63 |

## CHAPTER V.

|   |    |
|---|----|
| Of the Verb   | 66 |
| 1. Stem.—2. Termination   | 67 |
| 3. Numbers  | 67 |
| 4. Persons  | 67 |
| 5. Moods  | 67 |
| 6. Tenses   | 63 |
| Auxiliary Verbs   | 69 |
| Conjugation   | 70 |
| SECTION I.—Auxiliary Verbs                                      | 71 |
| I. Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb <b>avoir</b> (=to have)    | 71 |
| II. Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb <b>être</b> (=to be)      | 75 |
| SECTION II — Activo Verbs                                       | 79 |
| I. First Conjugation.—Verb <b>aimer</b> (=to love)              | 79 |
| II. Second Conjugation.—Verb <b>finir</b> (=to finish)          | 83 |
| III. Third Conjugation.—Verb <b>recevoir</b> (=to receive)      | 86 |
| IV. Fourth Conjugation.—Verb <b>rompre</b> (=to break)          | 89 |
| SECTION III.—Conjugation of Verbs.—1. Interrogatively;          |    |
| 2. Negatively; 3. Interrogatively with a negative               | 92 |
| SECTION IV.—Remarks on the Formation of the Tenses              | 96 |
| SECTION V.—Passive Verbs  | 98 |
| Conjugation of the Passive Verb <b>être aimé</b> (=to be loved) | 99 |

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

vii

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| SECTION VI.—Neuter Verbs ... ..   | 101 |
| Conjugation of the Verb <b>tomber</b> (=to fall) ... ..   | 102 |
| SECTION VII.—Reflexive Verbs ... ..   | 104 |
| Conjugation of the Reflexive Verb <b>se reposer</b> (=to rest) ... ..   | 105 |
| SECTION VIII.—Impersonal Verbs ... ..   | 109 |
| Conjugation of the Impersonal Verb <b>neiger</b> (=to snow) ... ..  | 109 |
| SECTION IX.—Irregular and Defective Verbs ... ..  | 110 |
| 1. First Conjugation: <b>e</b> ... ..   | 111 |
| 2. Second Conjugation in <b>ir</b> with Imperfect in <b>issais</b> ... ..   | 112 |
| 3. Second (direct) Conjugation in <b>ir</b> ... ..  | 113 |
| 4. Third Conjugation: <b>oir</b> ... ..   | 119 |
| 5. Fourth Conjugation: <b>re</b> ... ..   | 124 |
| SECTION X.—Formation of the Verbs... ..   | 139 |
| SECTION XI.—Rules for the Agreement of the Verb with its Subject... ..  | 141 |
| <b>CHAPTER VI.</b>  |     |
| Of the Participle ... ..  | 142 |
| <b>CHAPTER VII.</b>   |     |
| Of the Adverb ... ..  | 143 |
| <b>CHAPTER VIII.</b>  |     |
| Of the Preposition ... ..   | 148 |
| SECTION I.—Formation of the Simple Prepositions... ..   | 149 |
| SECTION II.—Formation of Prepositive Locutions ... ..   | 150 |
| SECTION III.—Government of Prepositions ... ..  | 150 |
| <b>CHAPTER IX.</b>  |     |
| Of the Conjunction ... ..   | 152 |
| <b>CHAPTER X.</b>   |     |
| Of the Interjection ... ..  | 154 |
| <hr/>   |     |
| Conjugation of the auxillary verb <b>avoir</b> (=to have) negatively, interrogatively, and interrogatively with a negation ... .. | 156 |



|   |     |
|---|-----|
| Conjugation of the auxiliary verb <b>être</b> (= to be) negatively,<br>interrogatively, and interrogatively with a negation ... | 160 |
| Models of reflexive verbs conjugated negatively, interroga-<br>tively, and interrogatively with a negation ... ..               | 164 |
| Index ... ..  | 169 |
| French-English Vocabulary ... ..  | 178 |
| English-French Vocabulary ... ..  | 193 |

# INTRODUCTION

---

## PRELIMINARY REMARKS ON THE HISTORY AND GEOGRAPHY OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

**Geography.**—The French language extends over the whole of France, with the exception of one single province, Brittany, where, out of a population of 1,800,000, one million of individuals speak a language known by the name of **Bas-Breton**, and which is Celtic in its origin. To this important exception three small groups can be further added: the department of the North, where 200,000 inhabitants out of 1,200,000 speak the **Flemish language**, an offshoot from the German; the department of Lower-Pyrenees, where 120,000 persons speak the **Basque**, a very ancient idiom, the origin of which is unknown; finally, the department of Eastern Pyrenees (formerly the province of Roussillon), where 130,000 inhabitants speak the **Catalonian** language, derived from the Latin.

If the domains of the French language do not correspond exactly with the present territory of France, they include, on the other hand, several important districts outside the limits of that country, which represent an aggregate of a little more than 3,600,000 inhabitants, distributed as follows:—Belgium, 1,600,000; Germany, 1,000,000; French Switzerland, 400,000; finally, the Channel Islands, 60,000.

To these numbers we must add, out of Europe, the English colonies of Canada and Mauritius, which have retained the use of the French language, to say nothing of the French settlements (Algeria, Guiana, Senegal, etc.); we find thus 1,500,000 inhabitants more to be placed to the account of the French linguistic wealth.

With reference to the language, France is divided into two regions, **North** and **South**, the limits of which can be marked by tracing on the map a line extending from La Rochelle to Grenoble.

**North** of this line all cultivated people speak French; the peasants understand French, but make use of *patois* closely connected with it. These *patois* are four in number: 1. The **Norman**, spoken in the western district; 2. The **Picard**, in the north-western; 3. The **Lorrain**, in the eastern; 4. The **Burgundian**,

in the central and south-eastern. The analogy which these *patois* present with the French language has caused them to be collectively designated as *French patois*.

South of the line, linguistic circumstances are entirely different. Cultivated people, indeed, understand and write French; but in the relations they hold with each other they have recourse by preference (even in the large towns) to their own *patois*, which is an idiom as different from French as is Italian or Spanish. The inhabitants of the rural districts, notwithstanding the efforts made by the teachers of elementary schools, seldom speak anything but these *patois*, which are likewise four in number:—1. The **Gascon**, 2. The **Limousin**; 3. The **Languedocian**; and 4. The **Provençal**; the names sufficiently point out the provinces where these idioms are respectively used; they are called collectively *Provençal patois*, in opposition to the *French patois* spoken north of the line mentioned above.

**History.**—Everyone knows that the earliest inhabitants of Gaul, so far as we are aware, at least, were the *Galli*, who spoke a language belonging to the *Celtic* family, that is to say, akin to the idioms used in France by the natives of Lower Brittany, and, in the British Isles, by the Scotch Highlanders, the Irish, and the Welsh.

In the course of the first century, B.C., the legions led by Cæsar conquered Gaul, and reduced it to the position of a Roman province. Far superior to the *Galli*, in point both of science and of civilisation, the Romans forced upon them the Latin language—together with the yoke, in the same way as the French have forced their language upon the Arabs of Algeria.

At Rome, however, just as in the France of the nineteenth century, there were two languages co-existing: that of the people and of the peasants, the **popular Latin**, in a word; and that of the learned and the *litterati*, which is known as **classical** or **literary Latin**—the former was less fettered, the latter was more refined; but both often employed different words to express the same idea. Thus, whilst the classical *Latin* had the substantive *equus* as an equivalent for *horse*, the colloquial *Latin* said *caballus*; whence the French *cheval*.

It is the **colloquial Latin**, naturally, which the Roman soldiers introduced amongst the peasants of Gaul; these, in their turn, transformed it into French, by dint of altering the pronunciation. If we notice how the English, who speak the French language, all modify the pronunciation of the French in the same manner, we shall easily understand how Latin uttered by the *Galli* was altered

According to one uniform system; it is precisely this altered Latin which is called *French*. The colloquial Latin thus changed through the Celtic pronunciation, began to make its appearance about the fifth century, at the downfall of the Roman empire, as a distinct language, which the *savants* of the day contemptuously called *lingua Romana rustica* (the Latin of the peasants); hence the designation **Romance language**. The invasion of the barbarians was then destroying the empire; in the storm, everything bearing the Roman stamp disappeared—administration, schools, justice, aristocracy, literature; the *literary* Latin shared the same fate—that idiom which had been both the organ and the result of intellectual activity.

As colloquial Latin produced **French** in Gaul, so it became **Italian** in Italy, and **Spanish** in Spain. In France the *Romance language* was subdivided into two great varieties corresponding with the rival races of the north and south. North of the Loire we find the *Langue d'oïl*, or French, properly so called; south of the Loire, we have the *Langue d'oc*, or Provençal; these curious names result from the custom, frequently resorted to during the Middle Ages, of designating languages by the sign of affirmation *oui* (yes); *oui* was *oil* in the north, and *oc* in the south.

The northern language, the *Langue d'oïl*, was in its turn divided, during the eleventh century, into four principal dialects: the **Norman**, the **Picard**, the **Burgundian**, and, finally, the **French** dialect, which was originally the one spoken in the province called *Ile-de-France*. (In the Middle Ages the name *Français* was given specially to the inhabitants of *Ile-de-France*.) These four dialects were equal in power and in influence, because there did not exist then, as there does to-day, one single centre, one capital of the kingdom, capable of setting to the whole country the model of elegant speaking. The Dukes, whether of Normandy or of Burgundy, the equals of the Dukes of France (we mean, of *Ile-de-France*), employed respectively in their official acts the language of their province, Norman or Burgundian.

How is it that these four languages were subsequently reduced to one? Why is it that the dialect of *Ile-de-France* was adopted subsequently as the common language, rather than the Burgundian or the Norman? As long as the Capetian monarchs, humble lords of *Ile-de-France* and of *Orléanais*, remained destitute of all influence beyond the limits of their royal domain (that is to say, from the tenth to the twelfth century), the French dialect enjoyed no notoriety out of these two provinces. But with the beginning of the twelfth century, the petty Kings of France began to extend

their possessions at their neighbours' expense; they annexed successively Berry (1101), Picardy (1200), Touraine (1203), Normandy (1204), Champagne (1361), and carried with them into these newly-acquired provinces the dialect of Ile-de-France, the *French*, which took, in each of them, the place of the native dialect; and being the *language of the king*, it was soon adopted as the type of fashionable parlance. Resisting this invasion, the people alone, in each province, retained their old dialect, and refused to accept the French. As they ceased then to be used in writing, the idioms of Picardy, Burgundy, and Normandy fell immediately from the rank of *dialects* (that is to say, of *literary* languages both written and spoken) to the humble position of *patois* (we mean of idioms not written, but only spoken). This date (the fourteenth century), when the provincial dialects became *patois*, whilst the dialect of Ile-de-France assumed the place of the common language of the kingdom, marked the death of the *Langue d'oïl* and the historical birth of the *French language*.

The *patois*, which we find at the present day in the rural districts of Picardy, Normandy, and Burgundy, are not therefore, as is commonly believed, the *literary French corrupted on the lips of the peasants*; they are the *débris* of the old provincial dialects reduced by political events from the rank of written languages to that of *patois*.

The *Langue d'oïl* had disappeared to make room for the French, south of the Loire, the *Langue d'oc* likewise vanished away. The terrible rivalry between the inhabitants of the south and those of the north was ended by the Crusade against the Albigenses, and the defeat of the Southerners struck the death-blow at the *Langue d'oc*. In 1272, Languedoc was annexed to France, and the introduction of the French language speedily followed as a matter of course. The *Langue d'oc* ceased to be used as a medium for writing; it fell from the rank of a literary language to that of a *patois*, and the *Limousin*, *Gascon*, *Languedocian*, and *Provençal* *patois*, which still persist at the present day in the rural districts of southern France, are merely the *débris* of that *Langue d'oc* which shone with so brilliant a lustre in the times of the troubadours.

To sum up: we see that French is by no means formed from the corrupted *débris* of the Celtic language, as some grammarians still persist in saying; and its history may be concisely stated thus: the *popular Latin*, transferred into Gaul by the soldiers of Cæsar, quickly suppressed the native language, the *Celtic*, and, through a series of slow and imperceptible transformations, gave

birth to a new idiom, the **Romance language**, to which the barbarians added a certain number of German words (such as *fief*, *fief*, *sénéchal*, *sencschal*, *baron*, *barou*, *échevin*, *alderman*, *shoriff*, etc.) relating to the feudal system, to war, and hunting. Towards the eighth century, this *Romance language* was divided into two branches: the *Langue d'oc*, south of the Loire, and the *Langue d'oïl*, north of that river. One of the four dialects of the *Langue d'oïl*, that of Ile-de-France, gradually supplanted all the others, and became, in the fourteenth century, the *French language*.

To the old stock of the language, which may be called **popular French**, two categories of new words have become superadded, from the fourteenth century to the nineteenth.

1st. **Foreign words**, imported as the result of several political circumstances, the principal of which are, in the thirteenth century, the Crusades and the commercial relations with the East; in the sixteenth, the Italian wars, and the influence of the Renaissance; in the seventeenth, the influence exercised by Spain over the court of Louis XIII., and the wars of Germany with France; finally, in the present century, the commercial, industrial, and social relations which the French are carrying on with England, and which are daily increasing.

To the first of these causes is due the introduction of a small quantity of Arabic or Oriental words (*sultan*, *sultan*, *caravane*, *caravan*, *derviche*, *dervis*, *alcool*, *alcohol*, *sequin*, *sequin*, etc.); to the second, the French language is indebted for more than five hundred words of Italian origin (especially terms of war and of the fine arts—*spalassin*, *fighter* or *hired assassin*, *brave*, *brave*, *gabion*, *gabion*, *parapet*, *parapet*;—*costume*, *dress*, *fresque*, *fresco*, *aquarelle*, *water-colour*, *galbe*, *entasis*, *torse*, *torso*, etc.); the third has contributed a few Spanish words (*mantille*, *mantilla*, *dudyne*, *duenna*, *matamore*, *bully*, *hâbler*, *to boast*, etc.), and a certain number of special German military expressions (*vaguemestre*, *baggage-master*, *schlague*, *military flogging*, *bivouac*, *bivouac*, *blockhaus*, *block-house*, etc.); finally, the invasion of English words is still going on very steadily (*whist*, *turf*, *spleen*, *tunnel*, *wagon*, *rail*, *coke*, *express*, *fashionable*, *budget*, *jury*, etc.). \*

2nd. In addition to the **popular French**, which is the work of the people, and to the **foreign words** imported into France as the result of political circumstances, we must distinguish a third series of expressions created by learned men since the eleventh century, and ever on the increase. This **learned French** con-

\* For the etymology of all these words, see Brachet's "*Dictionnaire étymologique*."

sists of words borrowed directly by the *savants*, either from the Greek (*autopsie, aristocratie, microscope, cosmographie*), or from the Latin (as *relation, proportion, préméditation, précession, coordination, etc.*).

As a conclusion to these short historical remarks, let us show by a few numbers in what proportions the three elements—**popular** French, words of **foreign origin**, and **learned** or **artificial** words—have combined to form the French language. We shall take as the basis of our calculation the *Dictionnaire de l'Académie française*, which contains about 27,000 words: out of these we find 600 whose origin is entirely unknown; 1000 are words of foreign extraction, borrowed from the modern languages (English, Italian, Spanish, etc.); whilst 14,000 are of *learned origin*, having been made up by scholars with the help of Greek and Latin. We thus obtain a total of 15,600 words, leaving us rather less than 12,000 constituting what we may designate as *popular French*. Of these 12,000 words, about 8000, such as *pauvre-ette* (= poor creature), *faibl-ir* (= to grow weak), *maigr-ir* (= to get lean, or thin), are immediately created by the French with the help of the simple words *pauvre* (= poor), *faible* (= weak), *maigre* (= lean), etc. The simple words, which constitute the real substratum of the language, are therefore reducible to about 4200, of which 3800 are of Latin origin, whilst the remaining 400 are German words introduced by the Teutonic conquerors at the time of the invasion (fifth century).

#### OBJECT AND DEFINITION OF GRAMMAR.

We express ourselves by means of **phrases**, which are composed of **words**; words, in their turn, are composed of **letters**.

The French grammar is the series of rules to be observed in the French language for the assemblage of *letters* into words, and the combination of *words* into *sentences*. Hence three divisions in the grammar: the study of **letters**, the study of **words**, and the study of **sentences**.

# BOOK I.

## STUDY OF LETTERS.

### CHAPTER I.

#### OF THE FRENCH ALPHABET.

1. We express our thoughts by means of *words*, which are composed of one or several *sounds*, represented in writing by signs called *letters*.

2. The collection of all the letters used in a language is called its *Alphabet*.

The French alphabet is composed of twenty-six letters, as follows:— \*

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q,  
R, S, T, U, V, W, † X, Y, Z.

These twenty-six letters do not express all the sounds of the French language; there are some other simple sounds which are expressed by joining together two letters of the alphabet, thus forming a new group. *Ch*, for instance, is a simple sound represented by two letters.

Why does the French alphabet follow this curious order in which consonants and vowels are jumbled together indiscriminately? Because it is derived from the Latin, whose alphabet was already arranged in this order. The Latins borrowed their alphabet from the Greeks, and the Greeks took theirs from the Phœnicians.

3. All the sounds of the French language are divided into two classes, viz. **vowels** and **consonants**.

\* We do not attempt any equivalent pronunciation of the French Alphabet; the pupil must learn from the master how the letters are pronounced.

† *W* is used in words taken from English and German, and in their French derivatives.



## SECTION I.

## OF THE VOWELS.

2. The sound produced by a simple emission of the voice (*a, o, u*), is called a *vowel*. There are seven vowels in French—

**a, e, i (or y), o, u, eu, ou.**

All the vowels can be pronounced by themselves without the help of any other sound.

5. All the vowels can be either **short** or **long**, according as they are pronounced **quickly** or **slowly**: thus *a* is short in *patte* (=paw, foot), because it is pronounced rapidly; whilst it is long in *pâte* (=dough), because we lay a stress on the *d*. In the same way—

|           |                                  |  |
|-----------|----------------------------------|--|
| <i>e</i>  | is long in <i>bête</i> (=beast), | and short in <i>jette</i> (=he or she throws). |
| <i>i</i>  | “ <i>gîte</i> (=lodging),        | “ <i>petite</i> (=small).                      |
| <i>o</i>  | “ <i>côte</i> (=coast),          | “ <i>dévoté</i> (=devout).                     |
| <i>u</i>  | “ <i>flûte</i> (=flute),         | “ <i>butte</i> (=batt, mound).                 |
| <i>eu</i> | “ <i>heure</i> (=hour),          | “ <i>jeune</i> (=young).                       |
| <i>eu</i> | “ <i>jeûne</i> (=fast),          | “ <i>creuser</i> (=to dig).                    |
| <i>ou</i> | “ <i>voûte</i> (=vault),         | “ <i>toute</i> (=all).                         |

Out of the seven vowels *a, e, i, o, u, eu, ou*, the first five are represented in French by a single letter; the last two are expressed by the junction of two letters, namely *e* and *u*, *o* and *u*. Although appearing to the eye compound vowels, they give to the ear only one sound, *eu, ou*, as simple as that of *a* or *o*.

6. No remarks are needed about *a* and *i*; but *e, o, and eu* require some observations to be made—

The letter *e* is used in French to express **three sounds**, which in reality ought to be considered as three distinct vowels:—

1. A very *dull* sound, called **e muet** (mute), as in *homme* (=man), *venir*, (=to come).

2. An *acute* sound, called **e fermé** (close), as in *aimé* (=loved), *bonté* (=goodness). This *e* is generally denoted by the sign (´), called **acute accent** (*accent aigu*).

The *e* is likewise close in words ending by the letter *r* when the *r* is not pronounced. Thus *verger* (=an orchard), *rocher* (=a rock), *aimer* (=to love).

8. A very open sound, which is heard in *terre* (= earth, land), *mer* (= sea), *enfer* (= hell), *succès* (= success), *procès* (= lawsuit), and uttered by opening the mouth wide. This *e* is called **ouvert** (open), and is generally marked by the little sign ( ' ), called **grave accent** (*accent grave*). No accent is used when the open *e* is followed by two consonants, as in *peste* (= plague), *reste* (= remainder), *fresque* (= fresco), or when it is followed by a sounded *r* at the end of a word, as in :—

|                          |                           |
|--------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>amer</i> (= bitter)   | <i>fer</i> (= iron)       |
| <i>cancer</i> (= cancer) | <i>hier</i> (= yesterday) |
| <i>cher</i> (= dear)     | <i>hiver</i> (= winter)   |
| <i>enfer</i> (= hell)    | <i>ver</i> (= worm).      |

This sound of the open *e* is also rendered either by *ai*, as in :—

|  |                   |
|--|-------------------|
| <i>aire</i> (= threshing floor), pronounced <i>ère</i> . |                   |
| <i>chair</i> (= flesh),                                  | „ <i>chère</i> .  |
| <i>clair</i> (= clear),                                  | „ <i>clère</i> .  |
| <i>éclair</i> (= lightning),                             | „ <i>éclère</i> . |
| <i>pair</i> (= equal),                                   | „ <i>père</i> .   |

Or by *ei*, as in :—

|  |                  |
|--|------------------|
| <i>peine</i> (= trouble), pronounced <i>pène</i> . |                  |
| <i>Seine</i> (= Seine),                            | „ <i>scène</i> . |
| <i>veine</i> (= vein),                             | „ <i>vène</i> .  |

7. The sound *eu* is represented in French in three different ways, viz. :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <i>eu</i> , as in <i>heure</i> (= hour),  |  |
| <i>œu</i> , „ <i>bœuf</i> (= ox), <i>œuf</i> (= egg), <i>sœur</i> (= sister).   |  |
| <i>œ and ue</i> , „ <i>œil</i> (= eye), <i>accueille</i> (= greet [thou]), <i>cueille</i> (= pluck [thou]), <i>orgueil</i> (= pride), |  |

which are pronounced as if written :—

*accœuille, cœuille, orgœuil.*

8. The vowel *y* between two consonants is pronounced *i*, as in *analyse* (= analysis, parsing), *martyr* (= martyr), *presbytère* (= parsonage); but between two vowels it is sounded like two *i*'s, that is to say, that the first *i* is joined to the preceding vowel, as in *aboyer* (= to bark), pronounce *aboi-ier*, and not *aboi-er*; and in *pays* (= country), pronounce *pai-is*, and not *pa-is*.

9. A **diphthong** is the combination of two simple vowels pronounced by a single emission of the voice, as *ui* in *huileux* (=oily). *Ui*, being a compound of the two vowels *u* and *i*, is a diphthong.

*Diphthong* comes from the Latin *diphthongus* which, itself, was borrowed from the Greek, and means two sounds.

10. In French, diphthongs are formed with the four vowels *i*, *o*, *u*, *ou*, followed by some other vowel of the alphabet.

Thus **i** forms: **ia**, as in *piano* (=piano)

**ie**, " *piéd* (=foot)

**io**, " *piocher* (=to dig);

**o** forms: **oa**, as in *moabite* (=moabite)

**oe**, " *moelle* (=marrow)

**oi**, " *roi* (=king);

**u** forms: **ue**, as in *écuelle* (=bowl)

**ui**, " *huile* (=oil)

" " *suis* (=tallow);

**ou** forms: **oua**, as in *douanier* (=custom-house officer)

**ouc**, " *fouetter* (=to whip)

**oui**, " *oui* (=eyes)

" " *louis* (=louis)

### Exercise 1.

Writes out the following words in French and in English.

A. Underlining with one dash the **short**, and with two dashes the **long vowels** [see § 5]:—

|            |        |        |         |       |
|------------|--------|--------|---------|-------|
| pâté       | petite | cru    | fleur   | paix  |
| thé        | chute  | crâ    | malheur | île   |
| âge        | fête   | du     | pêcheur | jeune |
| sage       | épître | dû     | pêcheur | jeune |
| cravate    | sucro  | mot    | mur     | tache |
| fourchette | apôtre | aôt    | mür     | tâche |
| toté       | châsse | louve  | sur     | bûche |
| roté       | chasse | succès | sür     | fou   |
| ronte      |        |        |         |       |

B. Underlining the **e** mute (a); the **e** close (b); and the open **e** or its equivalents (c) [see § 6]:—

|            |            |         |           |           |
|------------|------------|---------|-----------|-----------|
| (a) pureté | tenir      | somme   | élever    | sentence. |
| mener      | bijouterie | Rome    | batelier  | féroce    |
| (b) aimé   | méchanceté | beautés | sobriété  | présent   |
| dîner      | légereté   | bouchor | boulangor | péril     |
| (c) excès  | élève      | hiver   | pair      | haine     |
| arrét      | presque    | chaise  | chair     | reine     |

**U. Underlining the eu or its equivalents [see § 7] :—**

|        |          |        |         |       |
|--------|----------|--------|---------|-------|
| beurre | fauteuil | deuil  | neud    | conf  |
| cœur   | œureuil  | œuille | vœu     | neuf  |
| chœur  | orgueil  | œueil  | demeure | œuvre |

**D. Arranging under two heads those where the y stands for i, and those where the y stands for ii [see § 8] :—**

|         |            |         |         |            |
|---------|------------|---------|---------|------------|
| croyant | foudroyant | fuyard  | cyprès  | presbytère |
| bruyant | rayon      | syllabe | style   | martyr     |
| payéan  | citoyen    | symbole | analyse | acolyte    |

**E. Underlining the diphthongs [see §§ 9 and 10] :—**

|        |         |          |        |          |
|--------|---------|----------|--------|----------|
| diable | huile   | médicere | étoile | écuelle  |
| acier  | tuile   | œmni     | poire  | œne      |
| cahier | guide   | œur      | roue   | œquestre |
| œriode | liquide | louage   | Louis  | quille   |

## SECTION II.

## OF THE CONSONANTS.

**11.** In the French alphabet there are twenty consonants :—

B, C, D, F, G, H, J, K, L, M, N, P, Q, R, S,  
T, V, W, X, Z,

to which CH should be added.

Several of these consonants express the same sound, thus *s*, *k*, *q* have the sound of *c* hard, e.g., cavalier (=horseman), kakatoos (=cockatoo), qualifier (=to qualify).

*S* and *c* are sounded alike in servir (=to serve), and cervelle (=brains);

*J* and *g* in j'ai (=I have), and goai (=jay), joli (=pretty), and œblier (=jailer);

*Z* and *s* in zéro (=zéro, nought), and déserteur (=deserter), which is pronounced dêzerteur.

These letters are called CONSONANTS, from the Latin word *consona* (that which is pronounced with, by the help of), because the old grammarians believed that a consonant could never be pronounced without the help of a vowel.

**12.** The consonants are produced by three different parts of the vocal mechanism: the throat, the teeth, and the lips. The six consonants, *c*, *k*, *q*, *g*, *j*, *ch*, which are produced by the throat, are for that reason, called

**gutturals** (from the Latin *guttur*, throat); two of them, **o** and **g**, have a double sound, viz., *hard* before the vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, as in *camarade* (=comrade), *gamin* (=street Arab), *corridor* (=passage), *gobelet* (=goblet); *cumuler* (=to accumulate), *guttural* (=guttural); and *soft* before the vowels *e* and *i*, as in *cerveau* (=brains), *germer* (=to sprout); *cirer* (=to black, to polish), *gibier* (=game).

**13. T, d, s, z**, which are produced by the *teeth*, are, for that reason, called **dentals** (from Lat. *dens, dentis*, tooth).

• placed between two vowels is sounded like **z**:—  
*cloison* (=partition) pronounce *cloizon*  
*poison* (=poison) „ *poizon*.

**14.** The consonants produced by the help of the *lips*, and for that reason called **labials** (from the Latin *labia*, lips), are **p, b, f, v**.

**15.** The two consonants **l** and **r** are called **liquids** (from the Latin *liquidus*, liquid, flowing), because these two letters are easily joined to other consonants, such as *p, b, c*, to form groups of letters quite liquid (*easy to pronounce*), such as *bl* in *blanc* (=white), *pl* in *plaine* (=field), *cl* in *clameur* (=clamour, outcry), *gl* in *gloire* (=glory), or *pr* in *premier* (=first), *cr* in *croire* (=to believe), *br* in *bruit* (=noise), *gr* in *grandir* (=to grow).

**16.** The two consonants **m** and **n** are called **nasal** (from the Latin *nasus*, nose), because they give to the vowels a peculiar sound proceeding from the *nose*, as *an* in *manger* (=to eat), *vanter* (=to praise).

The liquid *l* and the nasal *n* become liquid in some cases, that is to say, they are pronounced as if followed by a very weak *i*, audible, for instance, in *campagnard* (=countryman), and *travailler* (=to work).

**17. x** is a double consonant, pronounced sometimes like *cs* (*luxueux*=luxurious), sometimes like *gs* (*exact*=exact).

**10. H** is the weakest of all the consonants, just as *e silent* or *mute* is the weakest vowel. There are two kinds of *h*'s:—

1. *H silent* (or *mute*), which does not represent any sound, and over which leaps the elision of the article *le* or *la*, exactly as if the article was coming into contact with the vowel itself. Examples:—

*L'homme* (=the man), *l'habitude* (=the habit);

Exactly as in—

*L'abaissement* (=the abasement), *l'obéissance* (=the obedience).

2. *H aspirate*, which in French is not more heard than *h silent*, but which differs from it by preventing the elision:—

*Le héros* (=the hero), *la houlette* (=the shepherd's crook).

Care must be taken not to sound *les-zhéros*, *les-zhoulettes*.

#### QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. How are <i>words</i> formed?                                      | 10. What is to be noticed with reference to the letter <i>y</i> ?  |
| 2. How are <i>sounds</i> represented?                                | 11. What is a <i>diphthong</i> ?   |
| 3. What is the <i>alphabet</i> ?                                     | 12. Name the principal diphthongs.   |
| 4. How many letters are there in the French alphabet?                | 13. How many <i>consonants</i> are there in French?  |
| 5. What is the origin of the French alphabet?                        | 14. Name the <i>gutturals</i> —the <i>dentals</i> —the <i>labials</i> —the <i>liquids</i> —the <i>nasals</i> . |
| 6. What are <i>vowels</i> ?  | 15. When do the consonants <i>l</i> and <i>n</i> become liquid?  |
| 7. Give a list of the French vowels.                                 | 16. When is <i>h</i> a mute letter?—When does it become aspirate?  |
| 8. What is a short vowel?—a long vowel?                              |  |
| 9. What is the <i>e</i> mute?—the <i>e</i> close?—the <i>e</i> open? |  |

#### Exercise 2.

Write out the following words in French and in English.

A. Underlining the **guttural consonant** (see § 12):—

|         |        |           |          |       |
|---------|--------|-----------|----------|-------|
| cristal | jumeau | kilomètre | question | goût  |
| camp    | joyeux | requête   | chaleur  | dégât |

B. Underlining with one dash the **c** and **g** hard, and with two dashes the **c** and **g** soft:—

|          |        |        |         |        |
|----------|--------|--------|---------|--------|
| cascade  | garçon | courte | céleste | golfe  |
| cervelas | géant  | gibier | cible   | guêtre |

C. Underlining the **dentals** (a); the **labials** (b); and the **liquids** (c) [see §§ 13—15]:—

|     |         |           |          |          |        |
|-----|---------|-----------|----------|----------|--------|
| (a) | teindre | attentif  | dimanche | seigneur | zéro   |
|     | tempête | danser    | savoir   | sucrer   | zone   |
| (b) | poulet  | boncle    | figure   | perte    | revers |
|     | peuple  | faiblesse | verbe    | vertu    | bible  |
| (c) | blé     | grand     | bruit    | plateau  | plume  |
|     | croisée | blanc     | prairie  | trouble  | prune  |

D. Underlining the **nasal** (a), and the **liquid l** and **n** (b) [see § 16]:—

|     |         |          |           |          |            |
|-----|---------|----------|-----------|----------|------------|
| (a) | menton  | mensonge | un        | fonction | festin     |
|     | tonture | leçon    | puissance | prompt   | vilain     |
| (b) | mouille | campagne | pille     | vermeil  | gouvernail |
|     | oreille | règne    | aiguille  | sommeil  | Gascogne   |

E. Underlining with one dash the **x** employed instead of **es**, and with two dashes the **x** employed instead of **gz** (see § 17):—

|         |       |         |          |          |
|---------|-------|---------|----------|----------|
| luxe    | texte | exhaler | expres   | exposer  |
| exemple | exigu | voxer   | annexion | exigeant |

F. Underlining with one dash the **h** mute, and with two dashes the **h** aspirate (see § 18):—

|        |        |            |         |          |
|--------|--------|------------|---------|----------|
| habile | hagard | hache      | hasard  | héritier |
| hâie   | habit  | habitation | herbage | libou    |

## CHAPTER II.

### OF SYLLABLES.—ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS.

19. A **syllable** is one or several sounds which are pronounced without interruption, and by a single emission of the voice. Thus *ôté* (=taken away, past participle of *ôter*), is formed of two syllables, the first of which is composed of only one vowel (*ô*), and the second of a consonant (*t*) and a vowel (*é*).

When a syllable ends with an *e* silent (or mute), as *me*, in *j'aime* (=i love), it is called **silent** (or **mute**).

**20.** The name of **orthographic signs** is given to certain signs used in writing, either to indicate the changes of the same vowel, as *o* and *ô*, *é* and *è*, *ai* and *ai*; or the suppression of a letter, as in *l'épée* for *la épée* (=the sword); or lastly, the joining of two or three words into one, as *arc-en-ciel* (=rainbow), *pied-à-terre* (=temporary lodging, resting-place).

There are five kinds of *orthographic signs*, viz., the *accents*, the *cedilla*, the *dieresis*, the *apostrophe*, and the *hyphen*.

The **accents** are three in number: the *acute* (´), the *grave* (`), and the *circumflex* (^).

The *acute* accent is placed over *close é*: *bonté* (=kindness), *santé* (=health).

The *grave* accent is placed over *open è*: *procès* (=lawsuit), *succès* (=success). It is also placed over *à* (=to), *là* (=there), *où* (=where), *dès* (=as soon as), to prevent the confusion with *a* (= [he or she] has), *la* (=the, *fem. article*, or *her, pers. pronoun*), *ou* (=or), *des* (=of the, *defin. art.*, or *some, indefin. art.*).

The *circumflex* accent is placed over long vowels: *côte* (=coast, shore, rib), *gîte* (=dwelling).

The *circumflex* accent usually shows that a letter has been suppressed. Thus, the words *tête* (=head), *fête* (=festival), *bête* (=beast), were originally spelt *teste*, *feste*, *beste*, and they preserved that spelling till the middle of the eighteenth century. It was only in 1740 that the *Académie Française* replaced the consonant *s* by a *circumflex* accent in the above words and similar ones.

**21.** In order to show, when two vowels following each other are to be pronounced separately, the sign (¨) called **tréma** (dieresis) is placed over the second: thus *uë* in *ciguë* (=hemlock). Without the dieresis this word would be pronounced *cig*, because *ue* would be mute as in *figue* (=fig), *ligue* (=league).

The **apostrophe** (') denotes the suppression of the vowels *a*, *e*, *i*, in *le*, *la*, *je*, *me*, *te*, *se*, *de*, *que*, *si*, and a few



other words before another word beginning with a vowel or *h* silent, as in:—

|                                  |                           |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>L'épée</i> (=the sword)       | instead of <i>la-épée</i> |
| <i>J'arrive</i> (=I arrive)      | " <i>je-arrive</i>        |
| <i>S'il vient</i> (=if he comes) | " <i>si-il vient</i>      |
| <i>L'honneur</i> (=the honour)   | " <i>le-honneur</i>       |

22. The **cedilla** is a sign (,) placed under the *c* before *a*, *o*, *u*, when it has a soft sound, as in *façade* (=frontage, façade), *façon* (=form, shape), *rinçure* (=rinsings), instead of its regular hard sound before the same vowels, as in *camarade* (=comrade), *colombe* (=dove), *curieux* (=inquisitive).

23. The **hyphen**, called in French **trait d'union**, joins together either the different parts of a compound word, as *arc-en-ciel* (=rainbow), *chef-lieu* (=chief or county town), *vis-à-vis* (=opposite);—or the verb with its subject (in the interrogative conjugation), as in *irai-je* (=shall I go)? *viendrez-vous* (=will you come)?—or with its object, as in *croyez-moi* (=believe me), *venez-y-voir* (=come hither and see).

All these signs were introduced into the French language by the grammarians of the sixteenth century. The accents are borrowed from the Greek language, in which, however, they were used for a very different purpose. *Trema* is a Greek word which means "point, dot," or, more properly, "hole." *Apostrophe*, likewise borrowed from the Greek, means "that which wards off," the suppression of the vowel preventing, or *warding off*, the hiatus which would be caused by the discordant meeting of two vowels. The *cedilla* was borrowed from the Italian printers, who called *zediglia* a little crotchet like a *s* placed under *c*, when it was to be pronounced *s* instead of *k*. The Italian word comes from *seta* (*s*), and means properly "small *s*."

24. The three accents just described must not be mistaken for the *tonic accent* (from the L. *tonus*, a tone).

The raising of the voice on a particular syllable in every word is called the **tonic accent**, and the syllable on which falls that accent is called the **accented** or **tonic syllable**.

In French the accented syllable is always the last of the word, as *mouton* (=sheep), *cheval* (=horse), *il*

**aima** (=he loved), except when the word ends in *e* mute, as **table** (=table), **aimable** (=amiable), **lisible** (=legible), in which case the tonic accent is carried back to the penultimate: **table**, **aimable**, **lisible**.

It results from this that, when two mute syllables would otherwise come together at the end of a word, as in the feminine of adjectives, and in verbs (**muet-e** = dumb; **complet-e** = complete; **appeler** = to call, **j'appelle** = I call; **acheter** = to buy, **j'achète** = I buy; **mener** = to lead, **je mène** = I lead), the sound of the *e* in the last syllable but one is increased either by putting a grave accent over it (**complète**, **je mène**, **j'achète**), or by doubling the following consonant (**j'appelle**, **muet-te**).

### QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. What is a *syllable*? — How many syllables are there in *résidence*?
2. What is a *mute syllable*?
3. What is meant by *orthographic signs*?
4. Enumerate the orthographic signs used in French.
5. Where is the *acute accent* placed? — What are the various uses of the *grave accent*? — What does the *circumflex accent* generally show?
6. Where is the *tréma* placed?
7. Explain the use of the *apostrophe*, the *hyphen*, the *cedilla*.
8. State the origin of the various orthographic signs.
9. What do you mean by the *tonic accent*?
10. Which is the *accented syllable* in French words?

### Exercise 3.

Write out the following words in French and in English:

#### A. Underlining the **tonic** syllable (see § 24):—

|        |           |          |                   |          |
|--------|-----------|----------|-------------------|----------|
| aimant | président | souvent  | président (verbe) | veille   |
| aiment | expédient | trouvent | expédient (verbe) | veillent |

#### B. Underlining with one dash the **tonic** syllable, and with two dashes the **atonic** one (see § 24):—

|         |         |         |          |             |
|---------|---------|---------|----------|-------------|
| édifice | toniffe | froment | plancher | sonlèvement |
| forêt   | avoué   | charrue | assiette | fondement   |

## BOOK II.

---

### STUDY OF WORDS.

25. There are ten classes of words used in the French language, viz.:

- |                                  |   |
|----------------------------------|---|
| 1. <b>Le nom</b> (noun)          | 6. <b>Le participe</b> (participle)       |
| 2. <b>L'article</b> (article)    | 7. <b>La préposition</b> (preposition)    |
| 3. <b>L'adjectif</b> (adjective) | 8. <b>L'adverbe</b> (adverb)              |
| 4. <b>Le pronom</b> (pronoun)    | 9. <b>La conjonction</b> (conjunction)    |
| 5. <b>Le verbe</b> (verb)        | 10. <b>L'interjection</b> (interjection). |

These ten kinds of different words, which by their combination form the French language, may be compared to the different parts of the human body, and for that reason have been called by grammarians **parts of speech**—that is to say, *the parts of the language*.

All these parts of speech (with the exception of the article unknown to the Romans) passed from Latin into French.

### CHAPTER I.

#### OF THE NOUN OR SUBSTANTIVE.

26. The **noun** or **substantive** is a word used to name persons, animals, or things.

There are two kinds of nouns: **proper** nouns and **common** nouns.

The **proper** noun applies either to one *person* only, as *Pierre* (= Peter), *Paul* (= Paul), *Louis* (= Louis), or to one *thing* only, as *le Rhône* (= river Rhone), *la Loire* (= river Loire).

REMARK.—Proper nouns begin always with a capital letter.

The **common** noun designates either all the *persons* of the same nature, as *enfant* (=child), *marchand* (=merchant), *soldat* (=soldier); or *things* of the same kind, as *cour* (=court, yard), *jardin* (=garden), *maison* (=house).

**27. Collective** nouns are those which express a collection of persons or things, as *foule* (=crowd), *troupe* (=troop), *multitude* (=multitude).

**Compound** nouns are those which, although formed of two or three words, designate one single person or thing, as *chou-fleur* (=cauliflower), *arc-en-ciel* (=rainbow).

**28.** In nouns two things are to be studied and examined—*gender* and *number*.

## SECTION I.

## OF GENDER IN NOUNS.

**29. Gender** is the difference or distinction which is made between male and female beings.

In French there are two genders:—the **masculine**, and the **feminine**.

Men and males of animals, as *le père* (=the father), *le lion* (=the lion), are of the masculine gender. Women and females of animals, as *la mère* (=the mother), *la lionne* (=the lioness), are of the feminine gender.

Moreover, names of things which belong to neither sex have been made, by imitation, masculine or feminine. Thus *le bois* (=the wood), *le château* (=the castle), *le pays* (=the country), are masculine; whilst *la cour* (=the court, yard), *la grille* (=the grate, railing), *la lune* (=the moon) are feminine.

**30.** Feminine nouns are generally formed by adding an **e mute** to the masculine—

*marquis* (=marquis)  
*mrs* (=bear)

*marquise* (=marchioness)  
*ouïse* (=she-bear)

When the masculine noun ends with **en** or **on**, the **n** is doubled in the feminine—

*baron* (=baron)  
*chrétien* (=Christian)  
*lion* (=lion)

*baronne* (=baroness)  
*chrétienne* (=Christian)  
*lionne* (=lioness)

When the masculine ends in **er**, the feminine takes a grave accent ( ` ) over the **e** : *portier* (=door-keeper), *portière*.

EXCEPTIONS.—About twenty substantives form their feminine by changing **e** final into **esse**, as—*négre* (=negro), *négresse* (=negress); *tigre* (=tiger), *tigresse* (=tigress); *prophète* (=prophet), *prophétesse* (=prophetess); *hôte* (=host), *hôtesse* (=hostess), etc. *Chasseur* (=hunter), *pêcheur* (=sinner), weaken, besides, the diphthong *eu* into *e* mute, thus making *chasseresse*, *pêcheresse* (and not *chasseuresse*, *pêcheuresse*).

A few masculine substantives ending in **eur** form their feminine in **ice**, such as *acteur* (=actor), *ambassadeur* (=ambassador), etc., which make *actrice*, *ambassadrice*, etc. *Chanteur* (=singer), *voyageur* (=traveller), etc., have for their corresponding feminine: *chanteuse*, *voyageuse*, etc.

Many nouns, denoting professions generally followed by men, have no feminine: *imprimeur* (=printer), *graveur* (=engraver).

#### Exercise 4.

Write out the feminine of the following substantives, and give the meaning of each:—

|     |                  |                    |                    |                   |                    |
|-----|------------------|--------------------|--------------------|-------------------|--------------------|
| (a) | <i>marquis</i>   | <i>ouvrier</i>     | <i>chien</i>       | <i>gardien</i>    | <i>Lonis</i>       |
|     | <i>cousin</i>    | <i>lion</i>        | <i>comédien</i>    | <i>mercier</i>    | <i>écolier</i>     |
|     | <i>orphelin</i>  | <i>paysan</i>      | <i>magicien</i>    | <i>portier</i>    | <i>ours</i>        |
|     | <i>châtelain</i> | <i>Européen</i>    | <i>jardinier</i>   | <i>Anglais</i>    | <i>Italien</i>     |
|     | <i>filleur</i>   | <i>Français</i>    | <i>Romain</i>      | <i>berger</i>     | <i>Gascon</i>      |
| (b) | <i>pair</i>      | <i>chasseur</i>    | <i>maître</i>      | <i>Suisse</i>     | <i>traître</i>     |
|     | <i>prophète</i>  | <i>tigre</i>       | <i>défendeur</i>   | <i>prince</i>     | <i>comte</i>       |
|     | <i>négre</i>     | <i>chanoine</i>    | <i>hôte</i>        | <i>pêcheur</i>    | <i>enchanteur</i>  |
| (c) | <i>baigneur</i>  | <i>nageur</i>      | <i>pêcheur</i>     | <i>sauteur</i>    | <i>chanteur</i>    |
|     | <i>voyageur</i>  | <i>joueur</i>      | <i>travailleur</i> | <i>voleur</i>     | <i>faucheur</i>    |
|     | <i>acheteur</i>  | <i>laveur</i>      | <i>polisseur</i>   | <i>flatteur</i>   | <i>danseur</i>     |
| (d) | <i>délateur</i>  | <i>bienfaiteur</i> | <i>fondateur</i>   | <i>conducteur</i> | <i>directeur</i>   |
|     | <i>acteur</i>    | <i>moteur</i>      | <i>admirateur</i>  | <i>adorateur</i>  | <i>instituteur</i> |

## SECTION II.

### OF NUMBER IN NOUNS.

31. The **number** is the difference or distinction which is made between one single thing and several things collected together.

In French, as in English, there are two numbers—the **singular**, to denote one person or one thing, as *le lion* (=the lion), *le livre* (=the book); and the **plural**, to denote several persons or things, as *les lions* (=the lions), *les livres* (=the books).

**32. GENERAL RULE.**—The plural of nouns is formed by adding **s** to the singular: *L'homme* (=man), *les hommes* (=men); *le livre* (=the book), *les livres* (=the books).

The reason why the French forms its plural in **s**, in preference to **m** or **v**, or any other letter, may be briefly stated thus: the French language has borrowed from the Latin accusative both its singular and its plural; and the letter **s** was generally the sign of the accusative plural in Latin.

**33.** When a noun in the singular already ends in **s**, **x**, or **z**, it does not change in the plural—

*le fils* (=the son)  
*la voix* (=the voice)  
*le nez* (=the nose)

*les fils* (=the sons)  
*les voix* (=the voices)  
*les nez* (=the noses).

**34. EXCEPTIONS.**—Nouns whose singular ends in **au** or **eu** take **x** in the plural—

*un bateau* (=a boat)  
*le château* (=the castle)

*des bateaux* (=some boats)  
*les châteaux* (=the castles);

as well as the seven following nouns ending in **ou**:

*le bijou* (=the jewel)  
*un caillou* (=a pebble)  
*un chou* (=a cabbage)  
*le genou* (=the knee)  
*le hibou* (=the owl)  
*un joujou* (=a toy)  
*un pou* (=a louse)

*les bijoux* (=the jewels)  
*des cailloux* (=some pebbles)  
*des choux* (=some cabbages)  
*les genoux* (=the knees)  
*les hiboux* (=the owls)  
*des joujoux* (=some toys)  
*des poux* (=lice).

**N.B.**—All the other nouns ending in **ou** follow the general rule, and take **s** in the plural—

*un clou* (=a nail)  
*un verrou* (=a bolt)

*des clous* (=some nails)  
*des verrous* (=some bolts).

This irregularity is one of the remains of the old language. The French **s** in the plural is always silent: roses, fleurs, and in the Middle Ages, we find it spelt either **z** or **x**, in *nez* for *nez*, *voiz* or *voiz* for *voix*, for instance.

That license has remained in the words *bijou*, *genou*, etc., which are still written *bijoux*, *genoux*, whilst the plural of *clou* and *verrou* is spelt *clous*, *verrous*.

**35.** Nouns in *al* change *al* into *aux* in the plural—

|  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| <i>le cheval</i> (= the horse)             | <i>les chevaux</i> (= the horses)     |
| <i>un mal</i> (= an evil)                  | <i>des maux</i> (= evils)             |
| EXCEPT:— <i>bal</i> (= ball [to dance at]) | <i>chacal</i> (= jackal)              |
| <i>carnaval</i> (= carnival)               | <i>régal</i> (= regale, feast, treat) |

which take *s* in the plural:—*des bals* (= balls)

Seven substantives ending in *ail* follow the same rule—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <i>un bail</i> (= a lease)                   | <i>des baux</i> (= leases)                    |
| <i>le corail</i> (= coral)                   | <i>les coraux</i> (= the corals)              |
| <i>l'émail</i> (= the enamel)                | <i>les émaux</i> (= the enamels)              |
| <i>un soupirail</i> (= an air-hole)          | <i>des soupiraux</i> (= air-holes)            |
| <i>le travail</i> (= work)                   | <i>les travaux</i> (= the works)              |
| <i>le vantail</i> (= the leaf of r. door)    | <i>les vantaux</i> (= the leaves of doors)    |
| <i>un vitrail</i> (= a stained glass window) | <i>des vitraux</i> (= stained glass windows). |

N.B.—The word *bestiaux* is used as the plural of *bétail* (=cattle)

But all the other substantives ending in *ail* follow the general rule, as—

|                                 |  |
|---------------------------------|--|
| <i>un gouvernail</i> (= a helm) | <i>des gouvernails</i> (= helms), etc. |
|---------------------------------|--|

At the birth of the French language—that is, in the time of Hugh Capet—*al* became *als* in the plural: *un cheval*, *des chevaux*, *un mal*, *des maux*; but in the thirteenth century (about the time of St. Louis) *al* was softened, and became *au* before a consonant. Traces of this alteration are found in the expressions: *cheval-léger* (= a light dragoon), and *Vaugirard*, still used instead of *cheval-léger*, *Val Girard* (le vallon de Girard = the vale of Girard): *chevals* then became *chevaux*, and, subsequently, *chevaux*. (See § 34.)

**36.** The following nouns have two plural forms, one regular, the other irregular. The irregular generally leaves to the noun the same meaning it has in the singular, whilst the regular gives it a peculiar signification:—

## IRREGULAR.

|                                      |                                    |
|--------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <i>l'aïeul</i> * (= the grandfather) | <i>les aïeux</i> (= the ancestors) |
| <i>le ciel</i> (= sky, heaven)       | <i>les cieux</i> (= the heavens)   |
| <i>l'œil</i> (= the eye)             | <i>les yeux</i> (= the eyes)       |
| <i>le travail</i> (= the work)       | <i>les travaux</i> (= the works).  |

## REGULAR.

|  |
|--|
| <i>les aïeuls</i> (= the grandfathers)   |
| <i>les ciels</i> (= skies in pictures, bed-testers)                                |
| <i>les œils</i> , in compound nouns, as <i>œils-de-bœuf</i> (= oval windows)       |
| <i>des travaux</i> (= a minister's reports, o. brakes for shoeing vicious horses). |

\* *Aïeul* keeps its original meaning in the regular plural.

## QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. How many kinds of words are there in French?
2. What is the meaning of the expression; *parts of speech*?
3. What is a *common* substantive?—a *proper* one?
4. What is a *collective* noun?—a *compound* one?
5. What are the two points to be studied in connection with nouns?
6. What is meant by the *gender* of a noun?—How many genders are there in French?
7. What is the general rule for the formation of the feminine in French nouns?
8. Give the feminine of the following nouns: *chien—traître—lecteur—chanteur—pêcheur.*
9. What is meant by the *number* of a noun?—How many numbers are there in French?
10. How do you form the *plural* of French nouns?
11. How do you account for *s* being the sign of the plural in French?
12. How do you form the plural of nouns ending, 1. in *s, x, z*; 2. in *au* or *eu*; 3. in *ou*?
13. How do you explain the irregularity in the case of nouns ending in *ou*?
14. How do you form the plural of nouns ending, 1. in *al*; 2. in *ail*?—What are the exceptions?
15. What is the origin of the plural in *aux*?
16. Give the plural of *aïeul, etel, ail.*

## Exercise 5.

Write out the plural of the following substantives, giving the meaning of each:—

|     |          |         |            |          |            |
|-----|----------|---------|------------|----------|------------|
| (a) | vaisseau | homme   | maître     | excès    | château    |
|     | richesse | mer     | siècle     | bambou   | hampeau    |
|     | pois     | trou    | élève      | tableau  | caillou    |
|     | vice     | ami     | navigateur | vertu    | acajou     |
|     | verrou   | oiseau  | perdrix    | noix     |            |
| (b) | maréchal | canal   | régat      | camail   | gouvernail |
|     | cheval   | arsenal | bal        | détail   | rail       |
|     | bocal    | crystal | carnaval   | éventail | vitrail    |
|     | signal   | végétal | chacal     | bail     | travail    |
|     | amiral   | vassal  | soupirail  | corail   | général    |
|     | mal      | journal | attirail   | émail    | capital    |

## SECTION III.

## FORMATION OF SUBSTANTIVES.

37. New substantives are formed by joining together, either:

1. **two nouns**: un *chat-tigre* (=a tiger-cat),
2. **a noun and an adjective**: une *basse-taille* (=a bass voice),
3. **a noun and a verb**: un *tirs-bouchon* (=a cork-screw),
4. **a noun and a preposition**: un *sous-officier* (=a non-commissioned officer),
5. **a verb and an adverb**: un *passé-partout* (=a master-key),
6. **two nouns joined by a preposition**: un *arc-en-ciel* (=a rainbow).



38. From a simple substantive, as *boutique* (=shop), two new words can be derived in French :

(a) A **derivative**, with a new termination called **suffix** (from the Latin *suffixus*=*affixed to or after*) placed *after* the word, as *ier* in *boutiquier* (=shopkeeper). The part of the simple word which remains unaltered, and to which the suffix is added, is termed *root* or *stem*.

(b) A **compound**, with the help of a new word called **prefix** (from the Latin *præfixus*=*affixed before*), which is placed *before* the simple word, as *arrière-boutique* (=back-shop).

#### PREFIXES.

39. The prefixes used in French to form new substantives are—

|                 |       |   |
|-----------------|-------|---|
| <b>après,</b>   | as in | une <i>après-midi</i> (=an afternoon)                 |
| <b>avant,</b>   | „     | un <i>avant-coureur</i> (=a forerunner, precursor)    |
| <b>arrière,</b> | „     | une <i>arrière-boutique</i> (=a back-shop)            |
| <b>contre,</b>  | „     | un <i>contre-ordre</i> (=a counter-order)             |
| <b>entre,</b>   | „     | une <i>entre-côte</i> (=a rib of beef)                |
| <b>non,</b>     | „     | un <i>non-sens</i> (=a nonsense)                      |
| <b>sans,</b>    | „     | un <i>sans- façon</i> (an off-handed manner)          |
| <b>sous,</b>    | „     | un <i>sous-officier</i> (=a non-commissioned officer) |

The three particles, *bis*, *mi*, *vice*, are also used to form compound nouns—

|             |  |
|-------------|--|
| <b>bis</b>  | (=twice), as <i>bisaïeul</i> (=gr <sup>nd</sup> grandfather); <i>biscuit</i> (=biscuit, <i>lit.</i> twice baked)   |
| <b>mi</b>   | (=half), as <i>la mi-carême</i> (=mid-Lent); <i>la mi-juillet</i> (=the middle of July); <i>minuit</i> (=midnight) |
| <b>vice</b> | (=instead of, in the place of), as <i>vice-roi</i> (=viceroy), <i>vice-amiral</i> (=vice-admiral).                 |

#### SUFFIXES.

40. Derivative substantives are formed in French by adding to substantives already existing, to adjectives, or to verbs *eleven* suffixes: *ade*, *age*, *ain*, *ard*, *at*, *é*, *ée*, *er* (*ier*), *ie* (*erie*), *esse*, *isto*.

## 1. Substantives formed from substantives already existing.

From *colonne* (=a column), we get *colonnade*, i.e. a collection of columns.

|  |   |  |
|--|---|--|
| <i>plume</i> (=a feather)                | „ | <i>plumage</i> , i.e. a collection of feathers (=plumage). |
| <i>chapelle</i> (=a chapel)              | „ | <i>chapelain</i> (=a chaplain).                            |
| <i>bille</i> (=a ball)                   | „ | <i>billard</i> (=a billiard table).                        |
| <i>marquis</i> (=a marquis)              | „ | <i>marquisat</i> (=a marquisate).                          |
| <i>comte</i> (=a count or earl)          | „ | <i>comté</i> (=a county or earldom).                       |
| <i>bouche</i> (=a mouth)                 | „ | <i>bouchée</i> (=a mouthful).                              |
| <i>horloge</i> (=a clock)                | „ | <i>horloger</i> (=a clockmaker).                           |
| <i>pomme</i> (=an apple)                 | „ | <i>pommeter</i> , (=an apple-tree).                        |
| <i>boucher</i> (=a butcher)              | „ | <i>boucherie</i> (=a butcher's shop, butchery).            |
| <i>âne</i> (=an ass)                     | „ | <i>ânesse</i> (=a she-ass).                                |
| <i>journal</i> (=a journal or newspaper) | „ | } <i>journaliste</i> (=a journalist).                      |
|  | „ |  |

41. There is a particular class of suffixes which indicating *diminution*, are used to form derivatives, whose meaning is less than that of the simple word. For this reason they are called *diminutive suffixes*. Such are, for instance, *illon* in *négrillon* = *petit nègre* (=little negro); *eau* in *chevreau* = *petite chèvre* (=kid).

Some of these suffixes, whilst lessening the significance of the simple word, give to it, at the same time, a meaning of depreciation and contempt, as *aïlle* in—

*la ferr-aïlle* (=old iron), from *fer* (=iron)

*la valet-aïlle* (=flunkys), „ *valet* (=valet, footman), &c. &c.

## 42. The diminutive suffixes are six in number—

1. *aïlle*: *valet* (=valet), *valetaille* (=flunkys);
2. *as*: *plâtre* (=plaster), *plâtras* (=rubbish of plaster); (*in the feminine, asse*); *paille* (=straw), *paillasse* (=straw-mattress).
3. *et*: *livre* (=book), *livret* (=small-book); (*in the feminine, ette*); *chanson* (=song), *chansonnette* (=little song, ditty), hence the compound *elette*: *goutte* (=drop), *goutelette* (=small drop).

4. *on*: *âne* (=ass), *ânon* (=foal of an ass); hence the compounds *illon* and *eron*: *carpe* (=carp), *carpillon* (=small carp); *mouche* (=fly); *moucheron* (=gnat).

5. *eau*: *prune* (=plum), *pruneau* (=small plum); (*in the feminine, elle*), *prunelle* (=sloe).

The suffix *eau* makes *elle* in the feminine, because the old French language had the masculine termination *et* instead of *eau*; thus, *chapel*, the old form of *chapeau* (=hat), subsists still in *chapelier* (=hatter).

6. *ot*: *île* (=island), *ilot* (=small island).

## 2. Substantives derived from Adjectives.

43. New substantives are formed by adding to adjectives the five following suffixes: **esse, ise, ie, té, ure**. All these nouns, thus derived from adjectives, are feminine—

|                                  |                                      |
|----------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| <i>la faiblesse</i> (=weakness)  | from <i>faible</i> (=weak)           |
| <i>la sottise</i> (=foolishness) | „ <i>sotte, f. of sot</i> (=foolish) |
| <i>la maladie</i> (=illness)     | „ <i>malade</i> (=ill)               |
| <i>la pauvreté</i> (=poverty)    | „ <i>pauvre</i> (=poor)              |
| <i>la courbure</i> (=bending)    | „ <i>courbe</i> (=curved).           |

## 3. Substantives derived from Verbs.

44. New substantives are formed from the verbs in three different ways, either—

(1) by using as substantives the **infinitive**, the **present participle**, and the **past participle**, as *le manger* (=eating), which is the infinitive of *manger* (=to eat); *le tranchant* (=the edge), from *tranchant* (=cutting), present participle of *trancher* (=to cut); *le reçu* (=the receipt), past participle of the verb *recevoir* (=to receive);

Or, (2) by striking off the termination *er* from verbs belonging to the first conjugation; thus, from *replier* (=to fold back) we get *repli* (=fold); from *débuter* (=to begin) we get *debut* (=outset); from *appeler* (=to call), we get *appel* (=call, appeal);

Or (3) by adding to the root of the verb the suffixes **ade, age, ance, eur (or isseur), is, ment (or oment), oir, on, aison (or ison), ure**.

Thus from—

|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| <i>promen-er</i> (=to walk)          | comes <i>promenade</i> (=walk)           |
| <i>lav-er</i> (=to wash)             | „ <i>lavage</i> (=washing)               |
| <i>surveill-er</i> (=superintending) | „ <i>surveillance</i> (=superintendence) |
| <i>chass-er</i> (=to hunt)           | „ <i>chasseur</i> (=hunter)              |
| <i>rég-ir</i> (=to rule)             | „ <i>régisseur</i> (=steward, bailiff)   |
| <i>hâch-er</i> (=to chop, to mince)  | „ <i>hachis</i> (=hash, minced meat)     |
| <i>hurl-er</i> (=to howl)            | „ <i>hurlement</i> (=howling)            |
| <i>parl-er</i> (=to speak)           | „ <i>parloir</i> (=parlour)              |
| <i>jur-er</i> (=to swear)            | „ <i>juron</i> (=oath)                   |
| <i>li-er</i> (=to connect)           | „ <i>liaison</i> (=connection)           |
| <i>guér-ir</i> (=to cure)            | „ <i>guérison</i> (=curing, healing)     |
| <i>bless-er</i> (=to wound)          | „ <i>blessure</i> (=wound).              |

## QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. How are new substantives formed in French? — a *suffr.*
2. Form a few substantives with the prefixes *contre, sous, sans*.
3. What is the meaning of *mi, bis, vice*?
4. Form a few substantives with the suffixes *al, ou, aille, as, er, iste*.
5. What is meant by a *diminutive sup. e*?
6. Form substantives with the suffixes *on, eau, ot, us*.
7. How are new substantives formed from adjectives?
8. What parts of the verbs are sometimes used as substantives?
9. What suffixes are used to form fresh substantives from verbs? — Give a list of substantives formed from the verbs *nettoyer, abréger, épancher, frémir, sentir*.
10. What suffixes are used to form fresh substantives from verbs? — Give a list of substantives formed from the verbs *nettoyer, abréger, épancher, frémir, sentir*.

## Exercise 6.

Write a list of the following substantives with the PREFIX indicated, and give the meaning of both the simple and the compound substantives.

- (a) prefix **après**: coup, midi, demain, diner  
 (b) " **arrière**: garde, saison, boutique, neveu, pensée  
 (c) " **avant**: poste, coureur, garde, goût, propos  
 (d) " **contre**: coup, sens, maque, amiral, maîtie  
 (e) " **entre**: côte, mets, sol, pont  
 (f) " **non**: sens, valeur, payement  
 (g) " **sans**: façon, gêne, dont  
 (h) " **sous**: officier, préfet, maître, intendant, sol  
 (i) " **vice**: roi, président, amiral  
 (j) " **mi**: nuit, jambe, juillet, partie  
 (k) " **bis**: aieul, sac.

## Exercise 7.

Write a list of compound substantives, by adding to the following one of the SUFFIXES given below, and give the meaning of both the simple and the compound words.

- (a) suffix **ade (fem.)**:
- |          |          |         |        |       |
|----------|----------|---------|--------|-------|
| aube     | limon    | colonne | poivre | arc   |
| peuple   | face     | galop   | reuil  | bourg |
| balustre | rodomont | orange  | bourre | œil   |
- (b) suffix **at (masc.)**:
- |         |          |          |         |
|---------|----------|----------|---------|
| solde   | consul   | assassin | syndic  |
| externe | interne  | Auvergne | forme   |
| tribun  | cardinal | marquis  | économe |
- (c) suffix **age (masc.)**:
- |         |         |          |          |         |
|---------|---------|----------|----------|---------|
| herbe   | esclave | bande    | jardin   | feuille |
| bord    | branche | brigand  | corde    | ermite  |
| langue  | magasin | échafaud | vagabond | ligne   |
| pèlerin | grille  | mari     | monle    | plume   |
| jaube   | ferme   | coquille | l'omme   | ancrè   |

(d) *suffix ain (fem. aine)* :

|              |   |          |             |          |           |
|--------------|---|----------|-------------|----------|-----------|
| <i>Masc.</i> | { | monde    | république* | Rome     | proche    |
|              |   | public   | Afrique*    | terre    | Amérique* |
|              |   | Toulouse | Maroc       | quatre   | diocèse   |
| <i>Fem.</i>  | { | Dix †    | huit        | quarante | cinquante |
|              |   | soixante | cent        | trente   | vingt     |
|              |   | douze    | quinze      |          |           |

(e) *suffix ard (fem. arde)* :

|                |          |          |       |
|----------------|----------|----------|-------|
| <i>Masc.</i> : | campagne | montagne | bille |
| <i>Fem.</i> :  | poule    | bombe    | moût  |

(f) *suffix é* :

|                |        |        |
|----------------|--------|--------|
| <i>Masc.</i> : | comte  | doigt  |
| <i>Fem.</i> :  | parent | prévôt |

(g) *suffix ée (fem.)* :

|          |        |       |         |       |
|----------|--------|-------|---------|-------|
| assiette | soir   | rang  | matin   | niche |
| écuelle  | jatte  | table | cuiller | plume |
| pâte     | bouche | train |         |       |

(h) *suffix ier [or er after ch, g, or ill (masc.)* :

|          |           |           |                |         |
|----------|-----------|-----------|----------------|---------|
| cerise   | amande    | gomme     | grenade        | pomme   |
| poire    | châtaigne | groseille | rose           | orange  |
| pêche    | ferme     | douane    | barbe          | botte   |
| plomb    | guerre    | bourse    | vache          | cloche  |
| carrosse | tapis     | cheval    | écoto          | cuisine |
| serrure  | porte     | horloge   | couteau        | sulade  |
| colombe  | cendre    | sucre     | (O. F. coutel) | oreille |
| encre    | huile     | moutarde  | sable          | houille |

(i) *suffix erie [or ie when the substantive already ends in er] (fem.)* :

|          |          |            |           |        |
|----------|----------|------------|-----------|--------|
| acier    | berger   | boulangier | horlogier | pirate |
| boucher  | argent   | bois       | corde     | fruit  |
| ébéniste | gendarme | lait       | singe     | marbre |

(j) *suffix iste (masc. or fem.)* :

|        |           |         |         |         |
|--------|-----------|---------|---------|---------|
| dent   | monarchie | copie   | art     | journal |
| mode   | auberge   | capital | chimie  | fleur   |
| morale | ébène     | latin   | paysage | machine |

(k) *suffix diminutive aille (fem.)* :

|     |        |     |     |
|-----|--------|-----|-----|
| roc | pierre | fût | mur |
|-----|--------|-----|-----|

(l) *suffix diminutive as (fem. asse)* :

|          |     |       |                  |
|----------|-----|-------|------------------|
| papier † | fil | terre | (these are fem.) |
|----------|-----|-------|------------------|

\* *Que* is changed into *a*. † *The r* is changed into *s*. ‡ See § 24, and § 34  
 Note on *eur*.

(m) *suffix et (fem. ette)*:

|       |   |        |         |         |        |
|-------|---|--------|---------|---------|--------|
| Masc. | { | croc * | couple  | coussin | livre  |
|       |   | cabine | poulo   | jardin  | vers   |
|       |   | sac *  | feuille | coffre  | boule  |
| Fem.  | { | broche | fourche | chèvre  | poule  |
|       |   | bûche  | langue  | boule   | table  |
|       |   | cache  | mie     | épaule  | chaîne |

(n) *suffix et (fem. ette) preceded by el*:

|        |       |         |         |         |         |
|--------|-------|---------|---------|---------|---------|
| Masc.: | bras  | cervcau | château | marteau | manteau |
| Fem.:  | bande | côte    | goutte  | tarte   |         |

(o) *suffix on (masc.)*:

1.

|        |        |          |          |       |
|--------|--------|----------|----------|-------|
| jambe  | dinde  | ceinture | jupe     | âne   |
| corde  | guide  | aiguille | aigle    | glace |
| caisse | carafe | rejet    | médaille | lard  |

2. *preceded by ill (masc.)*:

|       |         |       |       |
|-------|---------|-------|-------|
| croix | cotte † | nègre | carpe |
|-------|---------|-------|-------|

3. *preceded by er (masc.)*:

|      |       |       |        |       |
|------|-------|-------|--------|-------|
| aile | vigne | bûche | mouche | chape |
|------|-------|-------|--------|-------|

(p) *suffix eau (fem. elle)*:

|       |   |        |       |       |       |
|-------|---|--------|-------|-------|-------|
| Masc. | { | chèvre | orme  | prune | cav   |
|       |   | tombe  | barre | écrit | table |
|       |   | corde  | pomme | plat  | tonne |
| Fem.  | { | canne  | prune | tour  | ombre |
|       |   | citron | tonne | dent  | rue   |

(q) *suffix ot (masc.)*:

|       |     |       |        |         |
|-------|-----|-------|--------|---------|
| balle | île | bille | maille | Charles |
|-------|-----|-------|--------|---------|

**Exercise 8.**

Write a list of the substantives formed by adding to the following adjectives the SUFFIXES indicated, and give the meaning of both the adjective and the compound noun.

(a) *suffix esse (fem.)*:

|        |        |        |       |        |
|--------|--------|--------|-------|--------|
| rude   | sage   | molle  | haute | petite |
| hardie | faible | tendre | juste | triste |

(b) *suffix ise (fem.)*:

|         |          |          |       |          |
|---------|----------|----------|-------|----------|
| franche | gourmand | marchand | sotte | fainéant |
|---------|----------|----------|-------|----------|

(c) *suffix ie (fem.)*:

|       |         |          |         |        |
|-------|---------|----------|---------|--------|
| félon | perfide | monotone | barbare | jaloux |
|-------|---------|----------|---------|--------|

\* These take *h* before *et*.† The derivative takes only one *t*.

(d) *suffix erie (fem.)*:

coquette   drôle                  espigle                  fourbe                  infirme

(e) *suffix té (fem.)*:

|          |          |        |            |         |
|----------|----------|--------|------------|---------|
| âcre     | âpre     | varié  | immense    | trivial |
| honnête  | chrétien | avide* | irtine     | facile  |
| pauvre   | dure     | acide  | sincère    | absurde |
| ferme    | nette    | banal  | timide     | agile   |
| ancienne | sûre     | docile | tranquille | ordûle  |

**Exercise 9.**

Write a list of the substantives formed from the following verbs, giving the meaning of both substantive and verb.

(a) *by taking the infinitive as a substantive*:

|          |          |         |        |         |
|----------|----------|---------|--------|---------|
| souvenir | sourire  | souper  | savoir | goûter  |
| manger   | déjeuner | devoir  | avoir  | toucher |
| riro     | dîner    | pouvoir | boire  | dire    |

(b) *by putting the verb in the present participle*:

|           |           |          |           |           |
|-----------|-----------|----------|-----------|-----------|
| pencher   | mendier   | débiter  | assister  | commander |
| protester | combattre | stimuler | commencer | habiter   |
| assiéger  | trancher  | passer   | conquérir | émigrer   |

(c) *by putting the verb in the past participle*:

|       |   |          |            |            |          |
|-------|---|----------|------------|------------|----------|
| Masc. | { | pendre   | apercevoir | devoir     | contenir |
|       |   | procéder | réduire    | précipiter | élire    |
| Fem.  | { | enjamber | bouffer    | voler      | gorger   |
|       |   | armer    | revoir     | ranger     | couver   |
|       |   | conduire | aller      | étendre    | entrer   |
|       |   | venir    | trancher   | arriver    | échapper |
|       |   | fumer    | monter     | renommer   | pousser  |

(d) *by taking off the termination r to form feminine, and er or tre to form masculine nouns*:

|       |   |          |         |           |          |
|-------|---|----------|---------|-----------|----------|
| Masc. | { | arrêter  | oublier | soupirer  | plier    |
|       |   | galoper  | crier   | désirer   | débuter  |
|       |   | siéger † | soucier | souhaiter | débattre |
|       |   | appeler  | rebuter | combattre | rabattre |

|      |       |           |       |           |
|------|-------|-----------|-------|-----------|
| Fem. | scier | rallonger | râper | vondanger |
|------|-------|-----------|-------|-----------|

(e) *by adding the suffix ade to the root*:

|         |          |           |       |
|---------|----------|-----------|-------|
| griller | rouler   | embrasser | parer |
| enfiler | fusiller | glisser   | ruer  |

\* All the following adjectives change the final e into i before the addition of e.  
 † Siegé keeps the e.

FORMATION OF SUBSTANTIVES.

(f) with suffix **age** (masc.):

|           |         |          |          |        |
|-----------|---------|----------|----------|--------|
| laver     | ouvrier | raffiner | pillar   | trier  |
| témoigner | tirer   | plier    | savonner | clamer |

(g) with suffix **ance** (fem.):

|          |            |             |          |          |
|----------|------------|-------------|----------|----------|
| dépendre | confier    | délivrer    | suffire  | môlir    |
| tempérer | croire     | espérer     | obliger  | prévoir  |
| venger   | ressembler | reconnaître | répugner | remonter |
| assister | souffrir   | convenir    | naître   | obéir    |

(h) with suffix **eur** (masc.):

|         |          |         |          |         |
|---------|----------|---------|----------|---------|
| pêcher  | pêcher   | relier  | tricher  | venger  |
| rire    | tailler  | compter | ramer    | diviser |
| vainere | flâner   | fourrir | enchérir | polir   |
| régir   | blanchir | acheter | acquérir | nager   |

(i) with suffix **is** (masc.):

|         |         |           |        |         |
|---------|---------|-----------|--------|---------|
| hacher  | loger   | rouler    | gâcher | semier  |
| tailler | colorer | eliqueter | laver  | croquer |

(j) with suffix **ment** or **ement** (masc.):

|           |          |           |           |          |
|-----------|----------|-----------|-----------|----------|
| affaïsser | abattre  | agencer   | amuser    | bâiller  |
| abonner   | accabler | accomplir | appauvrir | agrandir |
| applaudir | amollir  | établir   | éclaircir | rugir    |

(k) with suffix **oir** (fem. **oire**):

|        |         |          |        |           |          |
|--------|---------|----------|--------|-----------|----------|
| Fem. : | Masc. { | cracher  | saler  | repuïsser | moncher  |
|        |         | peigner  | fermer | réserver  | percher  |
|        |         | promener | mïrer  | abreuver  | parler   |
|        |         | nager    | mâcher | manger    | balancer |

(l) with suffix **on** (masc.):

|         |          |         |           |
|---------|----------|---------|-----------|
| jurer   | plonger  |         | brouiller |
| boucher | grognier | bâiller | couper    |

(m) with suffix **aison** (fem.):

|          |           |          |
|----------|-----------|----------|
| combïner | conjuguer | terminer |
| comparer | lier      | décïner  |

(n) with suffix **ison** (fem.):

|        |        |        |
|--------|--------|--------|
| garnir | guérir | trahir |
|--------|--------|--------|

(o) with suffix **ure** (fem.):

|          |         |        |         |          |
|----------|---------|--------|---------|----------|
| aller    | border  | ferrer | parer   | blessier |
| éhausser | user    | voiler | couper  | flétrir  |
| noïsir   | mourrir | polir  | élargir | bouffir  |

Exercise 10.

Write all the derivatives of the following words with the meaning of each.

|        |          |        |        |
|--------|----------|--------|--------|
| orange | dent     | plume  | ébène  |
| rang   | herbe    | table  | bouche |
| limon  | médaille | jardin | cerfe  |
| bûche  | bulle    | poivre | face   |



## CHAPTER II.

## OF THE ARTICLE.

**45.** The **article** is a word generally placed before the substantive, and agreeing with it in gender and in number.

There are two kinds of articles: 1. the **definite** article, placed before substantives the meaning of which is clearly determined, as **le cheval** in the following sentence: **le cheval de mon père est noir** (=my father's horse is black). The words *de mon père*, which accompany the substantive *cheval*, serve to determine it.

2. The **indefinite** article, placed before substantives the meaning of which is indeterminate, that is to say, vague, not precise, as **un cheval** in the following sentence: **un cheval s'est abattu** (=a horse has fallen down).

**46.** The definite article has both genders and numbers:

## SINGULAR.

|                           |                               |
|---------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <b>le</b> (for the masc.) | <b>le père</b> (=the father)  |
| <b>la</b> (for the fem.)  | <b>la mère</b> (=the mother). |

## PLURAL.

|                               |                                    |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <b>les</b> (for both genders) | { <b>les pères</b> (=the fathers)  |
|                               | { <b>les mères</b> (=the mothers). |

**47.** There are two remarks to make with reference to the definite article:—

1. When *le* or *la* comes before a substantive beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, the vowel (*e* or *a*) is cut off and replaced by an apostrophe. Thus—

|                                      |                 |                           |
|--------------------------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|
| <i>le-amour</i> (=the love)          | must be written | <i>l'amour</i>            |
| <i>la-envie</i> (=the envy)          | "               | <i>l'envie</i>            |
| <i>le-honneur</i> (=the honour)      | "               | <i>l'honneur</i> .        |
| <i>de le-amour</i> (=of the love)    | "               | <i>de l'amour</i>         |
| <i>de la-envie</i> (=of the envy)    | "               | <i>de l'envie</i>         |
| <i>à la-honneur</i> (=to the honour) | "               | <i>à l'honneur</i> , etc. |

This suppression of the vowel is called **elision**.

The word *elision* (=elision) is derived from the Latin acc. *elisionem*, which means "a striking out or forcing out."

2. When the masculine definite article, preceded by the prepositions *de* (=of, from), or *à* (=to), is placed before a substantive beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirate, both the article and the preposition are blended into one word. Thus—

*de le* becomes **du** : **du père** (=of the father)  
                   : **du héros** (=of the hero)  
*à le*        "    **au** : **au père** (=to the father)  
                   : **au héros** (=to the hero).

Before all plural substantives, *de les* is changed into *des*, and *à les* into *aux* :—

|                                     |            |                     |
|-------------------------------------|------------|---------------------|
| <b>des pères</b> (=of the fathers), | instead of | <b>de les pères</b> |
| <b>des héros</b> (=of the heroes),  | "          | <b>de les héros</b> |
| <b>des mères</b> (=of the mothers), | "          | <b>de les mères</b> |
| <b>aux pères</b> (=to the fathers), | "          | <b>à les pères</b>  |
| <b>aux héros</b> (=to the heroes),  | "          | <b>à les héros</b>  |
| <b>aux mères</b> (=to the mothers), | "          | <b>à les mères.</b> |

This blending of the definite article with the two prepositions *de* and *à* is called **contraction**.

43. The **indefinite article** in French is—

**un** = a or an, before masculine substantives,  
**une** = a or an, before feminine substantives,  
**des** = some, before substantives of both genders;

as—

**un** homme (=a man),    **des** hommes (=some men)  
**une** femme (=a woman), **des** femmes (=some women).

N.B.—1. *Some* or *any*, which is frequently omitted in English, must be expressed in French, and repeated before every substantive: *Il a de l'argent* (=he has money); *j'ai des pommes et des poires* (=I have apples and pears).

2. If an adjective precedes the substantive, or if the sentence is negative, **de** only is used: *J'ai de bonnes pommes* (=I have good apples), *je n'ai pas de pommes* (=I have no apples).

3. The possessive case is expressed in two ways in English: My father's horse, and the horse of my father, but in French only one way (the latter) is used: *le cheval de mon père*.

The same construction must be used for expressions like: a gold watch, *i.e.* a watch made of gold, *une montre d'or*.

## Exercise 11.

1. Le pain, du pain, de bon pain. 2. Le père a du pain. 3. Les bateaux sont sur l'eau. 4. Les joujoux des enfants. 5. Les fleurs des champs. 6. Les oiseaux ont des ailes. 7. Le marin est sur le rivage. 8. Donnez-moi des noisettes. 9. J'ai de bonne viande. 10. L'arbre a des branches. 11. Les bijoux de la mère. 12. Le maître de l'enfant. 13. L'encrier de porcelaine.

<sup>1</sup> livre (m.), <sup>2</sup> nous avons, <sup>3</sup> jeu (m.), <sup>4</sup> reine (f.), <sup>5</sup> racine (f.), <sup>6</sup> tronc (m.), <sup>7</sup> feuille (f.), <sup>8</sup> aile (f.), <sup>9</sup> herbe (f.), <sup>10</sup> rivage (m.), <sup>11</sup> discours (m.), <sup>12</sup> général (m.), <sup>13</sup> ville (f.), <sup>14</sup> chat (m.), <sup>15</sup> souls (f.), <sup>16</sup> marin (m.), <sup>17</sup> rame (f.), <sup>18</sup> voiture (f.), <sup>19</sup> princesse (f.), <sup>20</sup> école (f.), <sup>21</sup> maître d'école (m.), <sup>22</sup> splendeur (f.), <sup>23</sup> roi (m.), <sup>24</sup> verre (m.).

1. The father has a book.<sup>1</sup> 2. We have<sup>2</sup> some horses. 3. The sports<sup>3</sup> of the children. 4. The queen<sup>4</sup> has some jewels. 5. A tree has roots<sup>5</sup>; a trunk<sup>6</sup> has branches and leaves.<sup>7</sup> 6. The wings<sup>8</sup> of the birds. 7. The grass<sup>9</sup> of the fields. 8. From the boats to the shore.<sup>10</sup> 9. The speeches<sup>11</sup> of the generals.<sup>12</sup> 10. From a village (m.) to a town.<sup>13</sup> 11. A cat<sup>14</sup> and a mouse.<sup>15</sup> 12. A collection (f.) of fans. 13. The sailor's<sup>16</sup> oars.<sup>17</sup> 14. To the carriage<sup>18</sup> of a princess.<sup>19</sup> 15. Some bread, some meat, and some nuts. 16. The owls of the castles. 17. To a school<sup>20</sup> and to a schoolmaster.<sup>21</sup> 18. The eyes of the grandfathers. 19. To the splendour<sup>22</sup> of the heavens. 20. The ancestors of the king.<sup>23</sup> 21. A glass<sup>24</sup> inkstand.

## QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATIONS.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. What is the article?                  | 6. When is the article contracted?                  |
| 2. How many kinds of articles are there? | 7. What is the <i>indéfinite</i> article?           |
| 3. What is the <i>definite</i> article?  | 8. How do you translate <i>some</i> or <i>any</i> ? |
| 4. When is the article <i>elided</i> ?   | 9. When do you use <i>des</i> and when <i>de</i> ?  |
| 5. Define the word <i>ellipsis</i> ?     | 10. How is the possessive case expressed in French? |

## CHAPTER III.

## OF THE ADJECTIVE.

49. The adjective is a word added to the substantive to express the quality of the person or thing—that is to say, to indicate “what is” that person or thing. Thus, when we say, *L'homme est mortel* (=man is mortal), or, *Le cheval est noir* (=the horse is black), *mortel* makes us know that man is mortal; and *noir*, that the horse is black. *Mortel* and *noir* are adjectives.

The word *adjective* comes from the Latin *adjectivus*, and means “added to.”

50. There are three different sorts of adjectives:—

1. *Qualifying.*
2. *Determinative.*
3. *Indefinite.*

(1.) **Qualifying** adjectives express only the quality, as "*les grands hommes*" = the *great* (celebrated) men.

(2.) **Determinative** adjectives show precisely the object designated by the substantive to which they refer, as "*mon chapeau*" = *my* hat; "*ce cheval*" = *this* horse.

(3.) **Indefinite** adjectives mark that the substantive is used in a vague and general manner, as "*Chaque pays a ses coutumes*" = every country has its customs; "*plusieurs hommes sont venus*" = several men have come.

51. Adjectives take the mark of both genders and numbers. (See §§ 74-77.)

### SECTION I.

#### FORMATION OF THE FEMININE OF ADJECTIVES.

52. GENERAL RULE.—The feminine of adjectives is formed by adding an **e mute** to the masculine:

*méchant* (=wicked)    *méchant-e*  
*saint* (=holy)        *saint-e*

53. The masculine and feminine of adjectives ending in **e mute** are the same, as—

*un chapeau large* = a broad-brimmed hat  
*la rivière est large* = the river is wide  
*un homme maigre* = a thin man  
*une femme maigre* = a thin woman  
*un homme sage* = a wise man  
*une politique sage* = a wise policy.

54. To form the feminine of the adjectives ending in **eil, el, en, et, and on**—the final *l, n, or t* must be doubled before the final **e mute** is added—

| MASC.           |           | FEM.              |  |
|-----------------|-----------|-------------------|--|
| <i>cruel</i>    | =cruel    | <i>cruelle</i>    |  |
| <i>pareil</i>   | =alike    | <i>pareille</i>   |  |
| <i>ancien</i>   | =ancient  | <i>ancienne</i>   |  |
| <i>européen</i> | =European | <i>européenne</i> |  |
| <i>bon</i>      | =good     | <i>bonne</i>      |  |
| <i>muet</i>     | =dumb     | <i>muette</i>     |  |

55. A. Adjectives ending in *ier*, *er*, and the six adjectives *complet*, *concret*, *discret*, *inquiet*, *replet*, *secret*, instead of doubling the final consonant, take a grave accent on the *e* which precedes the *r* or the *t*.

| MASC.                    | FEM.             |
|--------------------------|------------------|
| <i>complet</i> =complete | <i>complète</i>  |
| <i>concret</i> =concrete | <i>concrète</i>  |
| <i>discret</i> =discreet | <i>discrète</i>  |
| <i>inquiet</i> =uneasy   | <i>inquiète</i>  |
| <i>replet</i> =replete   | <i>replète</i>   |
| <i>secret</i> =secret    | <i>secrète</i>   |
| <i>altier</i> =haughty   | <i>altière</i>   |
| <i>étranger</i> =foreign | <i>étrangère</i> |

(See § 24.)

56. B. *beau* =beautiful, becomes *belle* in the feminine

|                           |   |                 |   |
|---------------------------|---|-----------------|---|
| <i>jumeau</i> =twin,      | „ | <i>jumelle</i>  | „ |
| <i>nouveau</i> =new,      | „ | <i>nouvelle</i> | „ |
| <i>fou</i> =foolish, mad, | „ | <i>folle</i>    | „ |
| <i>mou</i> =soft,         | „ | <i>molle</i>    | „ |
| <i>vieux</i> =old         | „ | <i>vieille</i>  | „ |

Those adjectives were formerly spelt in the masculine *bel*, *jumel*, *nouvel*, *fol*, *mol*, *vieil*; hence the feminine in *elle* (*belle*, *jumelle*, etc.). The masculine forms *bel*, *nouvel*, *fol*, *mol*, *vieil* are still used before nouns which begin with a vowel or an *h* mute; thus we say:—

|   |                                 |
|---|---------------------------------|
| un <i>bel</i> homme =a fine man,            | instead of un <i>beau</i> homme |
| le <i>nouvel</i> an =the new year,          | „ le <i>nouveau</i> an          |
| le <i>fol</i> enfant =the mad, wild boy,    | „ le <i>fou</i> enfant          |
| le <i>mol</i> édredon =the soft eider-down, | „ le <i>mou</i> édredon         |
| un <i>vieil</i> ami =an old friend,         | „ un <i>vieux</i> ami.          |

57. To form the feminine of adjectives ending in *x*, change *x* into *s*, and add *e* mute, as—

| MASC.                  | FEM.              |
|------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>jaloux</i> =jealous | <i>jalouse</i>    |
| <i>heureux</i> =happy  | <i>heureuse</i> . |

Some adjectives even double that *s*, as—

| MASC.                            | FEM.            |
|----------------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>faux</i> =false               | <i>fausse</i>   |
| <i>roux</i> =sandy (of the hair) | <i>rousse</i> . |

Exception—

|                    |                |
|--------------------|----------------|
| <i>doux</i> =sweet | <i>douce</i> . |
|--------------------|----------------|

Formerly *faux*, *roux* were spelt *faus*, *rous*, the feminine form being *fausse*, *rousse*, just as the feminine of *gras* is *grasse*, and that of *gros* is *grosse*.

**58.** The masculine adjectives ending in **f** form their feminine by changing the final **f** into **v**, and adding *e* mute:

|  | MASC.                            | FEM.              |
|--|----------------------------------|-------------------|
|  | <i>bref</i> =short               | <i>brève</i>      |
|  | <i>crainitif</i> =fearful, timid | <i>crainitive</i> |
|  | <i>neuf</i> =new                 | <i>neuve</i>      |

**59.** **Blanc** (=white), **franc** (=frank), **sec** (=dry). **frais** (=fresh, cool), have for their feminine, **re** respectively, *blanche, franche, sèche, fraîche*.

But some adjectives ending in **c** hard (sounded as *k*), form their feminine by changing **c** into **que**, as—

|  | MASC.                 | FEM.            |
|--|-----------------------|-----------------|
|  | <i>caduc</i> =decayed | <i>caduque</i>  |
|  | <i>public</i> =public | <i>publique</i> |
|  | <i>turc</i> =turkish  | <i>turque</i>   |

N.B. The adjective **Grec** (=Greek), keeps the final **c** before the last syllable **que**—*i.e.* = *Grecque*.

The feminine of **long** is *longue*, and that of **oblong**, *oblongue*. If *e* mute only had been added to *caduc, public, turc*, we should have had the forms *caduce, publice, turce*, in which the *c* would have lost its hard sound. In order to preserve it in the feminine form, it was necessary to replace *c* by its equivalent *qu*; for the same reason *long* (=long) makes *longue*, and not *longa* (which is a substantive feminine—*e.g.*, “*longe de veau*”=a loin of veal.)

**60.** Adjectives ending in **eur** generally form their feminine by changing *eur* into *euse*; **trompeur** (=deceptive), **trompeuse**; **menteur** (=lying), **menteuse**.

Except **meilleur** (=better), **majeur** (=major), **mineur** (=minor), and a few others ending in **érieur, intérieur** (=interior), **inférieur** (=inferior), which follow the general rule, and form their feminine by adding an *e* mute to the masculine; **meilleure, majeure, mineure**, etc.

**Accusateur** (=accusing), **débiteur** (=owing), **protecteur** (=protecting), and a few others, make **accusatrice, débitrice, protectrice**, etc.

**Pécheur** (=sinful), **enchanteur** (=charming), **vengeur** (=avenging), make **pécheresse, enchantesse, vengeresse**. We have already seen (§ 30), that *resse* is only the softening of *euisse*.

|            |   |                     |
|------------|---|---------------------|
| <b>61.</b> | The feminine of <i>bénin</i> (= good-natured) | is <i>bénigne</i>   |
| "          | <i>malin</i> (= malicious)                    | " <i>maligne</i>    |
| "          | <i>favori</i> (= favourite)                   | " <i>favorite</i>   |
| "          | <i>coi</i> (= quiet, tranquil)                | " <i>coite</i>      |
| "          | <i>dissous</i> (= dissolved)                  | " <i>dissoute</i>   |
| "          | <i>tiers</i> (= third)                        | " <i>tière</i>      |
| "          | <i>bellot</i> (= pretty)                      | " <i>bellotte</i>   |
| "          | <i>pâlot</i> (= palish)                       | " <i>pâlote</i>     |
| "          | <i>sot</i> (= foolish)                        | " <i>sotte</i>      |
| "          | <i>vieillot</i> (= oldish)                    | " <i>vieillotte</i> |
| "          | <i>bas</i> (= low)                            | " <i>basse</i>      |
| "          | <i>gras</i> (= fat)                           | " <i>grasse</i>     |
| "          | <i>las</i> (= tired)                          | " <i>lasse</i>      |
| "          | <i>épais</i> (= thick)                        | " <i>épaisse</i>    |
| "          | <i>express</i> (= express, positive)          | " <i>expresso</i>   |
| "          | <i>gros</i> (= big, large)                    | " <i>grosse</i>     |
| "          | <i>nu</i> (= nul)                             | " <i>nu</i>         |
| "          | <i>gentil</i> (= pretty, amiable)             | " <i>gentille</i>   |
| "          | <i>hébrau</i> (= Hebrew)                      | " <i>hébraïque</i>  |
| "          | <i>traître</i> (= treacherous)                | " <i>traïtresse</i> |

(see § 30).

Notice also that a diæresis is placed over the final *o* in the feminine of adjectives when the masculine ends in *gu*, in order to keep the sound of the *u*: *aigu* (= acute), *contigu* (= contiguous), *niguë*, *contiguë*; otherwise the *gue* would be pronounced as in *figue* (= fig).

**Exercise 12.**

1. Ma tante est riche. 2. L'histoire ancienne est intéressante. 3. La nature du tigre est cruelle. 4. La couleur du vin est vermeille. 5. Cette poire est bonne. 6. Vous êtes trop prudente pour ne pas être discrète. 7. Votre fille est jalouse. 8. La température est douce. 9. Sa chevelure est rousse. 10. Craignez la foudre vengeresse. 11. Cette robe est vieille. 12. Cette paysanne est grecque. 13. La viande est trop fraîche. 14. J'ai rencontré votre sœur favorite chez (at the house of) mon oncle. 15. Sa lettre est très-flatteuse.

<sup>1</sup> dame, <sup>2</sup> L'Espagne, <sup>3</sup> dernièrement, <sup>4</sup> bienfaiteur, <sup>5</sup> des pauvres, <sup>6</sup> je n'aime pas, <sup>7</sup> voix (*f.*), <sup>8</sup> main (*f.*), <sup>9</sup> punir, <sup>10</sup> coupable, <sup>11</sup> je la regarde comme, <sup>12</sup> affligé, <sup>13</sup> flotte (*f.*), <sup>14</sup> armée (*f.*), <sup>15</sup> nouvelle (*f.*).

1. My favourite sister. 2. Your letter is too flattering. 3. This lady<sup>1</sup> is discreet and prudent. 4. Spain<sup>2</sup> is rich in fruits. 5. Have you met this countrywoman lately.<sup>3</sup> 6. The queen is the benefactor<sup>4</sup> of the poor.<sup>5</sup> 7. I do not like<sup>6</sup> (a) red (head of) hair. 8. He has a cruel disposition. 9. Her voice<sup>7</sup> is sweet. 10. The avenging hand<sup>8</sup> of (the) justice punished<sup>9</sup> the guilty.<sup>10</sup> 11. Your aunt is very kind; I consider her as<sup>11</sup> the consoler of the afflicted.<sup>12</sup> 12. The Turkish fleet<sup>13</sup> and the Greek army.<sup>14</sup> 13. The news<sup>15</sup> is false. 14. That child's face is ruddy.

## SECTION II.

## FORMATION OF THE PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES.

**62. GENERAL RULE.**—The plural of adjectives is formed like that of substantives, *i.e.*, by adding **s** to the singular:

| MASC. SING.               | MASC. PL.     | FEM. PL.       |
|---------------------------|---------------|----------------|
| <i>grand</i> =great, tall | <i>grands</i> | <i>grandes</i> |
| <i>saint</i> =holy        | <i>saints</i> | <i>saintes</i> |

**63.** When the adjective, in the singular, ends already in **s** or **x** there is no change in the plural masculine.

| MASC. SING.               | MASC. PL.       |
|---------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>gros</i> =big          | <i>gros</i>     |
| <i>épais</i> =thick       | <i>épais</i>    |
| <i>glorieux</i> =glorious | <i>glorieux</i> |

Examples: *des hommes gros* (=big men); *des murs épais* (=thick walls); *des souvenirs glorieux* (=glorious remembrances).

**64. EXCEPTIONS.**—I. Adjectives ending in **al** change that termination into **aux**, in the masculine plural, as—

| MASC. SING.            | MASC. PLUR.   |
|------------------------|---------------|
| <i>égal</i> =equal     | <i>égaux</i>  |
| <i>légal</i> =legal    | <i>légaux</i> |
| <i>loyal</i> =faithful | <i>loyaux</i> |

The adjectives *fatal* (=fatal), *glacial* (=icy), *final* (=final), *naval* (=naval), and a few others to be learned by use, form their masculine plural by adding **s** to the singular (*fatals*, *glaciaux*, etc.).

II. Adjectives ending in **eau** take **x** in the plural masculine.

| MASC. SING.            | MASC. PL.       |
|------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>beau</i> =beautiful | <i>beaux</i>    |
| <i>nouveau</i> =new    | <i>nouveaux</i> |

**NOTE ON THE POSITION OF ADJECTIVES.**—Adjectives are generally placed after the substantive to which they relate; past participles used as adjectives *always* follow the substantive. *Beau*=fine, *bon*=good, *grand*=great, tall, *joli*=pretty, *petit*=little, *meilleur*=better, *tout*=all, *mauvais*=bad, usually precede the noun.



40 OF THE DEGREES OF SIGNIFICATION IN ADJECTIVES.

Exercise 13.

1. Les généraux sont vieux. 2. Les chapeaux sont neufs. 3. Les fils sont bons. 4. Les souliers sont grands. 5. Les hommes sont égaux. 6. Ces accidents sont fatals. 7. Les palais sont beaux. 8. Les sujets sont loyaux. 9. Les livres sont épais.

<sup>1</sup> élève, <sup>2</sup> église, <sup>3</sup> étaient arrivés, <sup>4</sup> école (f.) communale, <sup>5</sup> spacieux, <sup>6</sup> salle (f.), <sup>7</sup> bail (m.), pl. baux, <sup>8</sup> difficulté (f.)

1. The hats are old. 2. These pupils<sup>1</sup> are equal. 3. These books are thick. 4. These men are loyal. 5. The churches<sup>2</sup> are old. 6. The royal palaces are beautiful. 7. The fatal days had come.<sup>3</sup> 8. The parish school<sup>4</sup> has very spacious<sup>5</sup> rooms.<sup>6</sup> 9. These leases<sup>7</sup> are new. 10. Legal difficulties.<sup>8</sup> 11. These books are moral.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"><li>1. What is an adjective?</li><li>2. How many kinds of adjectives are there?</li><li>3. Define the adjective qualifying, determinative, indefinite.</li><li>4. How is the feminine of adjectives generally formed?</li><li>5. Give the feminine of <i>cruel, pareil, bon</i>, etc.; also of <i>complet, correct</i>, etc., explain the peculiar formation of the feminine of <i>beau, nouveau</i>, etc.</li><li>6. Account for the formation of the feminine of adjectives in <i>x</i>.</li></ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"><li>7. What is the feminine of adjectives ending in <i>f</i>?</li><li>8. Give the feminine of <i>blanc, turc, grec, long, trompeur, protecteur, meilleur, vengeur, béni, favori</i>.</li><li>9. How is the plural of adjectives formed?</li><li>10. Give the plural masculine of <i>beau</i>.</li><li>11. How do you form the plural masculine of adjectives ending in <i>al</i>? State some exceptions.</li><li>12. Where is the qualifying adjective placed in French?</li></ol> |
|--|--|

SECTION III.

OF THE DEGREES OF SIGNIFICATION IN ADJECTIVES.

65. There are three degrees of signification in adjectives: the *positive*, the *comparative*, and the *superlative*.

The **positive** is the adjective itself: *mon cheval est noir*=my horse is black; (*noir*=black, which expresses simply a quality, is the *positive*).

66. The adjective is in the **comparative** when it expresses the quality with an idea of *comparison*.

The **comparative** may either express—

(a.) *superiority*, in which case the adverb **plus** (=more), is placed before the adjective, and **que** (=than), after it, as—

*mon cheval est plus noir que le v<sup>o</sup>tre*=my horse is blacker than yours.

or, (b.) *inferiority*, in which case the adverb **moins** (=less), is placed before the adjective, and **que** (=than), after it—

*mon cheval est moins noir que le vôtre*=my horse is less black than yours (not so black as yours).

or, (c.) *equality*, in which case the adverb **aussi** (=as) precedes the adjective, and **que** (=as) follows it—

*mon cheval est aussi noir que le vôtre*=my horse is as black as yours.

In a negative sentence **si** is often used instead of **aussi** :—

*mon cheval n'est pas si noir que le vôtre*=my horse is not so black as yours.

There are, therefore, three comparatives : (a) of *superiority*; (b) of *inferiority*; (c) of *equality*.

**67. Exceptions.**—The three adjectives *petit* (=little or small), *bon* (=good), *mauvais* (=bad), form their comparative irregularly :—

**Petit**, comparative *moindre*; **bon**, comparative *mieux*; **mauvais**, comparative *pire*. (*Petit* and *mauvais*, however, have also a regular comparative—*plus petit*, *plus mauvais*).

Do not mistake them for the adverbs **peu**, **bien**, **mal**, which become *moins*, *mieux*, *plus mal*, or *pis* in the comparative.

**68.** The adjective is in the *superlative* when it expresses—

(A.) A quality in the highest degree *without any comparison*, as *mon cheval est très-noir*=my horse is very black, *i.e.*, my horse is *quite* black. This is called the **superlative absolute**, and is expressed by *très*, *fort*, *bien*, *extrêmement*, etc., all meaning *very*.

(B.) A quality in the highest degree *either*—

(a.) *superior*, but as compared with other persons or objects of the same kind, as *mon cheval est le plus noir de tous les chevaux de la ville*=my horse is the blackest of all the horses in the town.

or (b.) *inferior*, as *ma sœur est la moins forte de nous tous*=my sister is the weakest (*lit.* the least strong) of us all.

These are called **superlatives relative**, and are formed by placing the article or a possessive adjective before the comparative.

The superlatives of **bon** are *très-bon* (absolute)=very good, and *le meilleur* (relative)=the best; **petit** makes *très-petit* (absolute)=very small, and *le moindre* (relative)=the least; **mauvais** makes *très-mauvais* (absolute)=very bad, and *le pire* (relative)=the worst.

Remember that in French **plus**, **moins**, &c., are generally repeated before each adjective; also that *very much* must not in any case be translated by *très-beaucoup*, but by **beaucoup** only.

#### Exercise 14.

1. La rose est la plus belle des fleurs. 2. Le meilleur livre de ma bibliothèque. 3. Il est moins aimable que son frère. 4. Vous êtes plus âgé que moi. 5. Il n'est pas si avancé que votre ami. 6. Le moindre mal. 7. Il va mieux. 8. Ce qui est pis, c'est que la bataille est perdue. 9. Ce livre est très-intéressant.

<sup>1</sup> Beau, <sup>2</sup> doux, <sup>3</sup> avancé, <sup>4</sup> eux, <sup>5</sup> santé (s'), <sup>6</sup> jeune, <sup>7</sup> mort (s'), <sup>8</sup> perte (s'), <sup>9</sup> bataille (s'), <sup>10</sup> ceci, <sup>11</sup> cela.

1. Fine,<sup>1</sup> finer, finest. 2. Gentle,<sup>2</sup> less gentle, the least gentle. 3. Small, smaller, smallest. 4. A good book, a better book. 5. He is as forward<sup>3</sup> as they.<sup>4</sup> 6. His health<sup>5</sup> is better. 7. I am not so young<sup>6</sup> as your sister. 8. The death<sup>7</sup> of the general is less fatal than the loss<sup>8</sup> of the battle.<sup>9</sup> 9. This<sup>10</sup> is well, that<sup>11</sup> is better. 10. My sister is much better.

#### QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <p>1. What are the three degrees of signification in adjectives?</p> <p>2. How many different comparatives are there? How are they formed?</p> | <p>3. Give the comparatives of <i>bon</i>, <i>petit</i>, <i>mauvais</i>.</p> <p>4. How is the superlative formed?</p> <p>5. State what are the different kinds of superlative.</p> |
|--|--|

### SECTION IV.

#### FORMATION OF ADJECTIVES.

**69.** French adjectives are formed in the same way as nouns—that is to say, by *composition* and by *derivation*.

Adjectives formed by *composition*:— (a.) either two simple adjectives are joined together, such as *aigre* (=sour) and *doux* (=sweet), to form a compound adjective: *aigre-doux*=sourish; or (b.) a prefix is placed before simple adjectives (*see* § 38 [b.]), for the purpose of giving them a new meaning; as *bien-heureux* (=happy, blessed); *mal-heureux* (=unhappy), *in-constant* (=variable); *sous-marin* (=submarine); *sur-humain* (=superhuman). The prefixes most often used are: **archi, anti, bien, demi, in, mal, sous, sur, ultra.**

70. New adjectives are formed by *derivation* with the help of substantives, adjectives, and verbs *already existing in French*:—

- (a.) **Substantives** (*pierreux*=stony, from *Pierre*=stone);
- (b.) **Adjectives** (*noirâtre*=blackish, from *noir*=black);
- (c.) **Verbs** (*trompeur*=deceptive, from *tromper*=to deceive).

71. New adjectives are formed from substantives by adding to the substantives the terminations **eux, ain, in, é, er, u**. Thus: *courage* (=courage), *courageux* (=courageous); *monde* (=world), *mondain* (=worldly); *enfant* (=child), *enfantin* (=childish); *aile* (=wing), *ailé* (=winged); *mensonge* (=lie), *mensonger* (=untrue, lying); *barbe* (=beard), *barbu* (=bearded).

72. New adjectives are formed from existing adjectives with the help of the four terminations—**âtre, et (and elet), ot and aud**. These are called *diminutive suffixes*.

Ex.: *gris* (=grey), *grisâtre* (=greyish); *aigre* (=sour), *aigret* and *aigrelet* (=sourish); *vieux* (=old), *vieillot* (=oldish); *lourd* (=heavy), *lourdaud* (=clumsy).

73. The French language makes new adjectives from verbs, either by taking the **participles** (*present* or *past*) of the verb, or by adding to the stem of the verb the three suffixes **able, ard, if**. Thus *charmer*

(=to charm) gives *charmant* (charming); *polir* (=to polish), *poli* (=polished); *compar-er* (=to compare), *comparable* (comparable); *pill-er* (=to plunder), *pillard* (=plundering); *pens-er* (=to think), *pensif* (=pensive).

### Exercise 15.

Write a list of compound adjectives by adding to the following one of the **prefixes** enumerated below; give the feminine of each, and also the meaning of the compound words:—

- |      |        |                |  |
|------|--------|----------------|--|
| (a.) | prefix | <i>archi</i> , | ducal, diaconal, épiscopal, fou.           |
| (b.) | "      | <i>anti</i> ,  | social, fébrile, religieux, monarchique.   |
| (c.) | "      | <i>bien</i> ,  | heureux, séant, aimé, faisant.             |
| (d.) | "      | <i>demi</i> ,  | nu, fin, mort, fermé.                      |
| (e.) | "      | <i>in</i> ,    | constant, suffisant, différent, variable.  |
| (f.) | "      | <i>mal</i> ,   | formé, sain, habile, heureux, intentionné. |
| (g.) | "      | <i>sous</i> ,  | marin, jacent, terrain, axillaire.         |
| (h.) | "      | <i>ulti</i> ,  | libéral, mondain, royaliste, zodiacal.     |

Write in the same manner a list of derived adjectives:—

a.) From substantives with the suffix:

- eux*: pierre, rabot, joie, brume, heur.  
*ain*: monde, Rome, château, proche.  
*in*: enfant, mal.  
*é*: aile, bât, sangle, laite.  
*er*: message, mensonge, passage, potage.  
*u*: pointe, barbe, branche, bosse.

(b.) From verbs with the suffix:

- able*: comparer, séparer, voler, punir.  
*ard*: piller, bayer, vanter, brouiller.  
*if*: penser, pousser.

(c.) From adjectives with the diminutive suffix:

- âtre*: noir, bel, (beau), rouge, doux.  
*et (elet)*: aigre, rond, mou, fou.  
*ot*: vieil (vieux), pâle.  
*oul*: noir, sale, rouge, fin.

### QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- How do the French form new adjectives from adjectives already existing?
- What are the parts of the verb which are used in the formation of adjectives?
- Give a list of adjectives formed with the prefixes *bien*, *sous*; and with the suffixes *âtre*, *if*, *able*, etc.
- How are adjectives formed from substantives?
- What suffixes are added to the stem of the verb?

## SECTION V.

**AGREEMENT OF THE ADJECTIVE WITH THE  
SUBSTANTIVE.**

74. The adjective takes the same gender and number as the substantive which it qualifies. Thus: *Dieu est clément* (=God is clement); *ma mère est bonne* (=my mother is good); *les hommes sont mortels* (=men are mortal).

75. When an adjective qualifies several substantives in the singular, it is put in the plural. Thus: *le riche et le pauvre sont égaux devant Dieu* (=the rich and the poor are equal in the sight of God).

76. If the substantives are of different genders, the adjective is put in the masculine plural. Thus: *le roi et la reine sont prudents* (=the king and the queen are prudent).

## SECTION VI.

**DETERMINATIVE ADJECTIVES.**

77. There are three sorts of determinative adjectives:

*Numeral adjectives,*  
*Demonstrative adjectives,*  
*Possessive adjectives.*

**NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.**

78. Numeral adjectives are those which denote *number, order, or rank.*

There are two kinds of *numeral* adjectives: the *cardinal*, and the *ordinal*.

79. Numeral adjectives indicating the *number* or *quantity* of objects, as *trois* (=three), *quatre* (=four), *cinq* (=five), are called **cardinal**.

With the exception of *zéro*, which comes from the Arab, all the numeral adjectives are of Latin origin; for the French number as the Romans did, and have admitted their terms of numeration.

*Septante, octante, and nonante*, were formerly used as synonyms of *soixante-dix, quatre-vingts, and quatre-vingt-dix*, respectively. During the Middle Ages the *even decades* (60, 80, 120, 110, etc.) stood thus—

|                             |                             |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>trois-vingts</i> for 60  | <i>six-vingts</i> for 120   |
| <i>quatre-vingts</i> for 80 | <i>sept-vingts</i> for 140; |

—that is to say, three times twenty, four times twenty, etc. Traces of this ancient usage remain even in our day (to say nothing of *quatre-vingts*=80), as in the hospital "*des Quinze-Vingts*" (15×20=300), founded by St. Louis to support 300 crusaders, whose eyes had been put out by the infidels; so also Bossuet and Voltaire have made use of the expression *six-vingts ans* for 120 *ans* (=120 years).

Million (=million), and *milliard* (=a thousand millions), are derived from *mille* with the suffixes *on* and *ard*.

NOTE.—Care must be taken not to confound *un* (= a or an) indefinite article, with *un* (=one), numeral adjective.

**30.** Ordinal numeral adjectives point out the *rank* or *place* occupied by the object. They are formed, with the exception of *premier* (=first), and *second* (=second), by adding the termination *-ième* to the cardinal adjectives, as—

|                       |                                     |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>trois</i> = three  | <i>trois-ième</i> = third           |
| <i>six</i> = six      | <i>six-ième</i> = sixth             |
| <i>sept</i> = seven   | <i>sept-ième</i> = seventh          |
| <i>vingt</i> = twenty | <i>vingt-ième</i> = twentieth, etc. |

When the cardinal adjective ends in *e* mute, that *e* is cut off, as—

|                       |                              |
|-----------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>quatre</i> = four  | <i>quatre-ième</i> = fourth  |
| <i>onze</i> = eleven  | <i>onze-ième</i> = eleventh  |
| <i>douze</i> = twelve | <i>douze-ième</i> = twelfth. |

☛ *Neuf* (=nine), changes *f* into *v* :

|                    |                            |
|--------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>neuf</i> = nine | <i>neu-v-ième</i> = ninth. |
|--------------------|----------------------------|

*Cinq* (=five), adds *u* before the termination *-ième* :

|                    |                             |
|--------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>cinq</i> = five | <i>cinq-u-ième</i> = fifth. |
|--------------------|-----------------------------|

Formerly *prime, tiers, quint* were used in French as well as *premier, troisième, cinquième*. Traces of these old forms remain in some few locutions, as *de prime-abord* (=at first sight); *de prime saut* (=spontaneously); *le tiers état* (=the third estate, the Commons); *Charles-Quint* (=Charles the Fifth, Emperor of Germany and King of Spain, the great rival of Francis the First, King of France); *Sixte-Quint* (=Pope Sixtus Quintus, the fifth).

N.B.—The cardinal number is used instead of the ordinal in the following cases: (a.) after the names of Sovereigns: Henri *quatre* (= Henry IV.); (b.) in speaking of the days of the month: le *trois mars* (=the third of March.)

But *Premier* (=first) is an exception to this rule: François *premier* (=Francis I.); le *premier mars* (=the first of March). In compound numbers, *first* is to be translated by *un*: Le pape Jean vingt et *un* (= Pope John XXI.); le vingt et *un juin* (=the twenty-first of June).

**31.** Nouns of number which indicate a certain quantity (as *une dizaine*\*=a collection of ten, *une centaine*=a hundred), are connected with the numeral adjectives, as are also the nouns which denote the different parts of a whole (*le quart*=the fourth; *la moitié*=the half), and those which are used for multiplication (*le double*=the double; *le triple*=the treble, threefold; *le centuple*=centuple, a hundredfold).

### A Comparative Table of the Numeral Adjectives.

#### CARDINAL NUMBERS.

N.B.—*Un* is the only cardinal which takes the mark of the feminine: *une*.

1. un, *une*
2. deux
3. trois
4. quatre
5. cinq
6. six
7. sept
8. huit
9. neuf
10. dix
11. onze
12. douze
13. treize
14. quatorze
15. quinze
16. seize
17. dix-sept
18. dix-huit

#### ORDINAL NUMBERS.

N.B.—*Premier* and *second* are the only ordinals which are variable: *première, seconde*.

- 1st. premier, *première*
- 2nd. second, —e, or *deuxième*
- 3rd. troisième
- 4th. quatrième
- 5th. cinquième
- 6th. sixième
- 7th. septième
- 8th. huitième
- 9th. neuvième
- 10th. dixième
- 11th. onzième
- 12th. douzième
- 13th. treizième
- 14th. quatorzième
- 15th. quinzième
- 16th. seizième
- 17th. dix-septième
- 18th. dix-huitième

\* The article *a* which precedes these collectives in English, in sentences like the following, is expressed in French by *la*: combien *la douzaine* (=how much a dozen?).



CARDINAL NUMBERS—*continued*.

19. dix-neuf  
20. vingt  
21. vingt et un  
22. vingt-deux  
23. vingt-trois  
24. vingt-quatre  
25. vingt-cinq  
26. vingt-six  
27. vingt-sept  
28. vingt-huit  
29. vingt-neuf  
30. trente  
31. trente et un, etc.  
40. quarante  
41. quarante et un, etc.  
50. cinquante  
51. cinquante et un, etc.  
60. soixante  
61. soixante et un, etc.  
70. soixante-dix  
71. soixante et onze  
72. soixante-douze  
73. soixante-treize  
74. soixante-quatorze  
75. soixante-quinze  
76. soixante-seize  
77. soixante-dix-sept  
78. soixante-dix-huit  
79. soixante-dix-neuf  
80. quatre-vingts\*  
81. quatre-vingt-un, etc.  
90. quatre-vingt-dix  
91. quatre-vingt-onze  
92. quatre-vingt-douze  
93. quatre-vingt-treize  
94. quatre-vingt-quatorze  
95. quatre-vingt-quinze  
96. quatre-vingt-seize  
97. quatre-vingt-dix-sept  
98. quatre-vingt-dix-huit  
99. quatre-vingt-dix-neuf  
100. cent  
101. cent un  
102. cent deux  
103. cent trois  
200. deux cents\*  
300. trois cents\*, etc.

} *cent*} *of units*ORDINAL NUMBERS—*continued*.

- 19th. dix-neuvième  
20th. vingtième  
21st. vingt et unième  
22nd. vingt-deuxième  
23rd. vingt-troisième  
24th. vingt-quatrième  
25th. vingt-cinquième  
26th. vingt-sixième  
27th. vingt-septième  
28th. vingt-huitième  
29th. vingt-neuvième  
30th. trentième  
31st. trente et unième  
40th. quarantième  
41st. quarante et unième.  
50th. cinquantième  
51st. cinquante et unième  
60th. soixantième  
61st. soixante et unième, etc.  
70th. soixante-dixième  
71st. soixante et onzième  
72nd. soixante-douzième  
73rd. soixante-treizième  
74th. soixante-quatorzième  
75th. soixante-quinzième  
76th. soixante-seizième  
77th. soixante-dix-septième  
78th. soixante-dix-huitième  
79th. soixante-dix-neuvième  
80th. quatre-vingtième  
81st. quatre-vingt-unième, etc.  
90th. quatre-vingt-dixième  
91st. quatre-vingt-onzième  
92nd. quatre-vingt-douzième  
93rd. quatre-vingt-troizième  
94th. quatre-vingt-quatorzième  
95th. quatre-vingt-quinzième  
96th. quatre-vingt-seizième  
97th. quatre-vingt-dix-septième  
98th. quatre-vingt-dix-huitième  
99th. quatre-vingt-dix-neuvième  
100th. centième  
101st. cent-unième  
102nd. cent-deuxième  
103rd. cent-troisième  
200th. deux-centième  
300th. trois-centième, etc.

\* See Syntax, Chapter III. Vingt and cent take s when multiplied by a number and not followed by another, so deux cent un (no. 201) has no s.

| CARDINAL NUMBERS ( <i>continued</i> ). | ORDINAL NUMBERS ( <i>continued</i> ). |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| 1000. mille*                           | 1000th. millième                      |
| 5000. cinq mille                       | 5000th. cinq millième                 |
| 10,000. dix mille                      | 10,000th. dix millième                |
| 1,000,000. million                     | 1,000,000th. millionième.             |

X N.B.—The words *one*, *and*, in expressions like *cent-deux* = *one hundred and two*, are suppressed. *Million* and numbers above are substantives, and must be followed by *de*.

### Exercise 16.

1. Soixante-treize; Charles Quint; Louis quatorze. 2. J'ai six mille volumes dans ma bibliothèque. 3. Le premier janvier. 4. L'an mil huit cent soixante. 5. Cette armée se compose de vingt mille hommes. 6. Il a perdu deux cents francs, et sa sœur en a gagné deux cent cinquante. 7. Une douzaine de chemises. 8. Il a mangé le tiers de sa fortune. 9. J'ai dépensé un millier de francs pendant mon voyage. 10. Il est une heure un quart. 11. Il est deux heures moins dix.

\*Pape Pie, \*furent massacrés à, \*perdu, \*combien, \*argent, \*gagné, \*coûtent \*Pouvez-vous manger, \*gâteau (*m.*), \*dépensé, \*un millier (*m.*), \*livre (*f.*)  
 \*\*ducens.

1. 99; 2,846,578. 2. (The) Pope Pius<sup>1</sup> the Fifth. 3. The Protestants were murdered in<sup>2</sup> Paris in 1572. 4. The twenty-first of January. 5. Your brother has lost<sup>3</sup> 375 francs. 6. How much<sup>4</sup> (of) money<sup>5</sup> have you gained<sup>6</sup>? 25,000 francs. 7. These shirts cost<sup>7</sup> 36 shillings a dozen. 8. Four is the third of twelve. 9. Can you eat<sup>8</sup> thirteenth cakes<sup>9</sup>? 10. He has spent<sup>10</sup> about a thousand<sup>11</sup> (of) pounds.<sup>12</sup> 11. It was ten minutes to four. 12. We dine<sup>13</sup> at a quarter past seven.

### II.—DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES.

82. **Demonstrative adjectives** are used to point out the person or thing spoken of:—

*ce château* = this castle      *ce héros* = this hero.

The demonstrative adjectives are:—

|              |                                      |                    |                |
|--------------|--------------------------------------|--------------------|----------------|
| <i>ce</i>    | for the masculine singular:          | <i>ce lion</i>     | = this lion    |
| <i>cette</i> | for the feminine singular:           | <i>cette femme</i> | = this woman   |
| <i>ces</i>   | { for the plural of both<br>genders. | <i>ces garçons</i> | = these boys   |
|              |                                      | <i>ces filles</i>  | = these girls. |

\* Mille, in dates of the Christian era, is spelt *mil*.

**Cet** is placed before masculine substantives beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, instead of **ce** :—

**cet homme** = this man, not **ce homme**

**cet enfant** = this child, „ **ce enfant**.

¶ In order to show whether the person or thing we speak of is **near** or **far** from us the adverbs **-ci** (=here) and **-là** (=there) are joined to the substantive by a hyphen, as :—

**cet enfant-ci est brun** = *this* child (*i.e.* close to me) is dark

**cet enfant-là est blond** = *that* child (*i.e.* far from me) is fair.

**-ci** is the abridgment of **ici**, adverb of place.

### Exercise 17.

1. Cette gravure est très-belle. 2. Cet enfant a un vilain caractère. 3. J'aime ce cheval-ci, mais ce cheval-là est trop vieux pour moi. 4. Ces jardins-ci sont la propriété de mon père. 5. Cette dame est très-aimable. 6. Pourquoi battez-vous ces enfants-là? 7. Que dites-vous de ces jeunes personnes? 8. Ces raisins sont excellents. 9. Ce dictionnaire-ci n'est pas complet. 10. Ces souliers-là sont trop étroits.

Souler (*m.*), blessent, \*jeune demoiselle, \*dites que, \*déchiré, \*aimable vieillard, \*maire (*m.*), \*prenez, \*mûr, \*vu, <sup>10</sup> large, <sup>11</sup> propriété (*f.*), <sup>12</sup> caractère (*m.*), <sup>13</sup> battez, <sup>14</sup> habit (*m.*) & *m.*

1. This child. 2. These generals. 3. I do not like these old horses. 4. This garden belongs to my father. 5. Those shoes hurt<sup>1</sup> that young lady.<sup>2</sup> 6. You say that<sup>3</sup> this engraving is torn.<sup>4</sup> 7. That amiable old man<sup>5</sup> is the mayor<sup>6</sup> of the town. 8. Take<sup>7</sup> these grapes; they are ripe.<sup>8</sup> 9. Have you seen<sup>9</sup> that dictionary? 10. These hats are too wide.<sup>10</sup> 11. This lady has a fine estate.<sup>11</sup> 12. The temper<sup>12</sup> of that child is abominable. 13. Dust<sup>13</sup> this coat.<sup>14</sup>

### III.—POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

**83. Possessive adjectives** are placed before the noun to point out to whom the object belongs :—

**mon cheval** = my horse—*i.e.* the horse which belongs to me  
**ton chapeau** = thy hat—*i.e.* the hat „ „ thee  
**son bâton** = his stick—*i.e.* the stick „ „ him.

The possessive adjectives are:—

A. When the object belongs to one person only (**mon chien** = my dog):—

| SINGULAR.  |           | PLURAL.                     |
|------------|-----------|-----------------------------|
| MASC.      | FEM.      | (FOR BOTH GENDERS.)         |
| <i>mon</i> | <i>ma</i> | <i>mes</i> = my             |
| <i>ton</i> | <i>ta</i> | <i>tes</i> = thy            |
| <i>son</i> | <i>sa</i> | <i>ses</i> = his, her, its. |

B. When the object belongs to several persons at the same time (**notre chien** = our dog; **nos chevaux** = our horses):—

| SINGULAR.           | PLURAL.              |
|---------------------|----------------------|
| (FOR BOTH GENDERS.) | (FOR BOTH GENDERS.)  |
| <i>notre</i>        | <i>nos</i> = our     |
| <i>votre</i>        | <i>vos</i> = your    |
| <i>leur</i>         | <i>leurs</i> = their |

63 The masculine forms *mon*, *ton*, *son* are placed before feminine nouns beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, instead of the feminine *ma*, *ta*, *sa*, in order to prevent the hiatus which the meeting of two vowels would produce; thus we must say:—

|                          |                      |                          |
|--------------------------|----------------------|--------------------------|
| <b>mon</b> <i>âme</i>    | = my soul,           | instead of <i>ma-âme</i> |
| <b>ton</b> <i>épée</i>   | = thy sword,         | " <i>ta-épée</i>         |
| <b>son</b> <i>humour</i> | = his or her temper, | " <i>sa-humour.</i>      |

In Old French *mon* was strictly kept for masculine, and *ma* for feminine nouns. Whenever *ma*, *ta*, *sa* came before a word beginning with a vowel, the *a* was elided, as it is now for the feminine definite article *la*, and people then said *m'âme*, *t'épée*, *s'amie*, just as we now say *l'âme*, *l'épée*, *l'amie*. Towards the fourteenth century the use of the masculine forms *mon*, *ton*, *son* superseded this elision, which has, however, survived in the term of endearment *m'amie*, *ma amie* (= my love), which later on became, by corruption, *ma mie*; hence came the expressions *ta mie*, *sa mie* = thy, his lady-love, etc.

NOTE that in French, the possessive adjective agrees with the thing possessed, not with the possessor; also, that it must be repeated before each noun: **son** père, **son** frère et **sa** sœur (= his, or her father, brother and sister).

**Exercice 18.**

1. Où est votre plume, et où sont mes livres?
2. Notre maison est grande.
3. Je parlerai de vous à mon père.
4. Vos crainctes

sont ridicules. 5. Ma montre avance. 6. Ton habit est taché.  
7. Je vous montrerais ses gravures. 8. Ma mère est à la campagne.  
9. Son cheval est boiteux. 10. J'aime beaucoup nos cousins; ils sont très-aimables.

\* Amitié (*f.*) pour, \* sincère, \* loi (*f.*), \* suprême, \* livre (*m.*), \* mère (*f.*), \* A la campagne (*f.*), \* vous montrerais-je, \* sur la table, \* gant (*m.*), \* canne (*f.*), \* quand, \* maison (*f.*), \* brûlé, \* parlerai, \* rapporté, \* chaque pays, \* coutume (*f.*)

1. Your engravings are good. 2. My friendship for<sup>1</sup> you is sincere.<sup>2</sup> 3. His laws<sup>3</sup> are supreme.<sup>4</sup> 4. These books<sup>5</sup> belong to my mother.<sup>6</sup> 5. Our cousins (*m.*) are in the country.<sup>7</sup> 6. I have lost my watch. 7. Shall I show you<sup>8</sup> his horses? 8. My pens are on the table.<sup>9</sup> 9. Give me my coat, my gloves,<sup>10</sup> and my walking-stick.<sup>11</sup> 10. When<sup>12</sup> have you seen your cousin? 11. His house<sup>13</sup> is burnt.<sup>14</sup> 12. I shall speak<sup>15</sup> to your officer. 13. Her friend has brought back<sup>16</sup> his book. 14. Each country<sup>17</sup> has its own laws and customs.<sup>18</sup>

## SECTION VII.

## INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES.

**§1.** Indefinite adjectives denote that the noun is used in a vague and general manner, as: **aucune** lettre n'est arrivée (=no letter has arrived); **quelque** malheur nous menace (=some misfortune threatens us).

These adjectives are twelve in number:

1. **aucun** (*fem.* **aucune**)=any, no, none; 2. **autre**=other, another; 3. **certain** (*fem.* **certaine**)=some, some one, a certain; 4. **chaque**=each; 5. **maint** (*fem.* **mainte**)=many; 6. **même**=same; 7. **nul** (*fem.* **nulle**)=no, none; 8. **plusieurs**=several; 9. **quelconque**\* =whatever, whatsoever; 10. **quelque**=some; 11. **tel** (*fem.* **telle**)=such; 12. **tout** (*plur. masc.* **tous**, *fem. sing.* **toute**)=all, every.

N.B.—**Certain** is an indefinite adjective when it means *un*, *quelque*=one, some, as: *certain homme* (=a man, some man). But when it means *sûr* (=sure), it is a qualificative adjective, as: *j'en suis certain* (=I am sure of it).

\* *quelconque* always follows the noun.

**Aucun** and **nul** are accompanied by *ne*: *Je ne connais aucun de ses frères* (= I don't know any of his brothers).

### Exercise 19.

1. Je n'ai aucune envie de punir un autre élève. 2. Certain renard gascon; d'autres disent normand. 3. Chaque jour amène avec lui son travail. 4. Maînt scrivassier se croit poète. 5. J'ai rencontré plusieurs soldats dans la rue. 6. Il n'a nulle pitié. 7. Tel maître, telle maison. 8. Tous les matins je lis un livre quelconque. 9. Tel qui rit vendredi, dimanche pleurera. 10. Plusieurs de vos amis sont ici.

<sup>1</sup> élève (m.), <sup>2</sup> ne sortira vendredi, <sup>3</sup> semaine (f.), <sup>4</sup> scrivassier (m.), <sup>5</sup> voiture (f.), <sup>6</sup> ferait plus de, <sup>7</sup> vu, <sup>8</sup> personne (f.), <sup>9</sup> sentiment (m.), <sup>10</sup> vau, <sup>11</sup> rebelle (m.), <sup>12</sup> renard (m.).

1. Have you (of) such pupils? <sup>1</sup> 2. None of these soldiers shall go out on Friday.<sup>2</sup> 3. Every week<sup>3</sup> my father brings with him many a scribbler.<sup>4</sup> 4. Like master, like man. 5. Your friend has several horses. 6. Are you of another opinion (f)? <sup>7</sup> 7. I have seen several fine carriages.<sup>5</sup> 8. Another poet would do more<sup>6</sup> work every day. 9. Have you seen<sup>7</sup> the same persons? <sup>8</sup> 10. Every child likes (the) cakes. 11. He has no sense<sup>9</sup> of envy. 12. I am going<sup>10</sup> to punish several rebels.<sup>11</sup> 13. I have met no fox<sup>12</sup> in the street.

### QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATIONS.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <p>1. Give a list of the <i>determinative adjectives</i>.</p> <p>2. What are the <i>numeral adjectives</i>?</p> <p>3. Give a list of the cardinal numbers.</p> <p>4. What is the difference between <i>un</i> indefinite article, and <i>un</i> numeral?</p> <p>5. How do you form the French <i>ordinal</i> numbers?</p> <p>6. What are the numerals which serve to multiply?</p> | <p>7. Write down the <i>demonstrative adjectives</i>.</p> <p>8. Remark on the demonstrative adjective <i>ce</i>.</p> <p>9. Give a list of the <i>possessive adjectives</i>.</p> <p>10. State the peculiarities which affect the words <i>mon, ton, son</i>.</p> <p>11. What are the <i>indefinite adjectives</i>?</p> <p>12. Remark on the adjective <i>certain</i>.</p> |
|--|--|

## CHAPTER IV.

### OF THE PRONOUN.

**35.** The pronoun is a word which takes the place of the noun. In the sentence *Henri est espiegle, mais il deviendra raisonnable* (= Henry is frolicsome, but he

will grow steady), the word **il**, being put there instead of **Henri**, is a pronoun.

*Pronoun* is the Latin *pronomem* (*pro*=instead of, *nomen*=noun).

**86.** The pronoun takes the gender and number of the noun instead of which it is used. *Les hirondelles partent*; **elles** vont dans les pays chauds (=the swallows are on the wing; they go to warm countries). **Elles** is feminine plural, because **hirondelles** is feminine plural. *Votre maison est grande*; **la mienne** est plus petite (=your house is large; mine is smaller). **La mienne** is feminine singular to agree with **maison**.

**87.** There are five kinds of pronouns:—

1. *The personal.*
2. *The demonstrative.*
3. *The possessive.*
4. *The relative.*
5. *The indefinite.*

## SECTION I.

### PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

**88.** **Personal pronouns** are those which point out the persons, and indicate the part they play in the speech.

In the sentence *je devine que tu viens de chez lui* (=I guess you come from his house), we distinguish at once three different persons, *je*, *tu*, *lui*, as being the actors in this little drama. These actors have different parts, which are indicated here by three distinct words: the *first* part (**je**=I) is that of the actor *who speaks*; the *second* (**tu**=thou), that of the actor *spoken to*; and the *third* (**lui**=him), that of the actor *spoken of*.

These three *characters*, or rather *parts*, are called **personnes**—persons (from the Latin [*dramatis*] *persona*), and represented by the **personal pronouns**, which point out beings *by the part they act in* that short piece called a *sentence*.

**89.** The personal pronouns are divided into *conjunctive*, *disjunctive*, and *reflective*.

The **conjunctive personal pronouns**, or pronouns immediately connected with the verb, are:—

## Singular.

**Je = I; tu = thou; il, elle = he, she, it.**

|      |                    |                      |   |
|------|--------------------|----------------------|---|
| Nom. | <b>Je = I.</b>     | <b>tu = thou.</b>    | <b>il, elle = he, she, it.</b>              |
| Gen. |                    |                      | <b>en = of him, her, it.</b>                |
| Dat. | <b>me = to me.</b> | <b>te = to thee.</b> | <b>lui, y (of things) = to it, to them.</b> |
| Acc. | <b>me = me.</b>    | <b>te = thee.</b>    | <b>le, la = him, her, it.</b>               |

## Flural.

**Nous = we; vous = you; ils, elles = they.**

|      |                    |                       |                           |
|------|--------------------|-----------------------|---------------------------|
| Nom. | <b>Nous = we.</b>  | <b>vous = you.</b>    | <b>ils, elles = they.</b> |
| Gen. |                    |                       | <b>en = of them.</b>      |
| Dat. | <b>nous = tous</b> | <b>vous = to you.</b> | <b>leur = to them.</b>    |
| Acc. | <b>nous = us.</b>  | <b>vous = you.</b>    | <b>les = them.</b>        |

**90.** All conjunctive pronouns, used as subject, are placed *before* the verb, except when the sentence is interrogative: **il vient** (=he comes); **vient-il?** (=does he come?).

**91.** When used as object, all the conjunctive pronouns are placed immediately *before* the verb, unless the verb is in the imperative and used affirmatively: **Je le connais** (=I know him); **ne le fais pas** (=do not do it); **fais-le** (=do it).

**92.** When a verb governs two conjunctive pronouns, both are placed before the verb, the dative being put first, and the accusative next: **Je te le donne** (=I give it to you); **te le donne-t-il?** (=does he give it to you?).

However, **lui, leur** are to be put after **le, la, les**: **Je le lui donne** (=I give it to him).

N.B.—1. All these pronouns are used for both genders, with the exception of:—

**il, le, ils, eux**, which are reserved for the masculine; and **elle, la, elles**, which are reserved for the feminine.

**2. Vous** is used for politeness' sake instead of **tù**, and the adjective remains in the singular: **Paul, vous êtes triste** (=Paul, you are sad).

**3.** The pronouns **le, la, les** must not be mistaken for the definite article **le, la, les**, the former always



accompany a verb, the latter a substantive: *Voici le livre que je vous ai promis, prenez-le* (=here is the book I promised you; take it).

4. **Leur** is a personal pronoun when it means *à eux, à elles* (=to them), and accompanies a verb. In that case it never takes the mark of the plural, as: *Je leur ai donné un livre* (=I have given them a book). It is a possessive adjective when it signifies *d'eux, d'elles* (=of them), and is placed before a substantive. It must then take the mark of the plural, as: *Ces enfants ont perdu leurs livres* (=these children have lost their books). **Leur**, possessive adjective, never takes the mark of the feminine: **Leur** *filles* (=their daughter), **leurs** *filles* (=their daughters).

5. **En** is a pronoun when it is used instead of *de lui* (=of him); *d'elle* (=of her); *d'eux, d'elles* (=of them): *J'aime cet enfant et j'en suis aimé* (=I love this child, and I am loved by him). Otherwise it is either an adverb, *j'en viens* (=I come from thence), or a preposition, *je suis en France* (=I am in France).

6. **Y** is a pronoun when it means *à cette chose* (=to this thing), *à ces choses* (=to these things), *à cela* (=to that): *L'affaire est importante, j'y donnerai tous mes soins* (=the affair is important; I shall bestow all my care upon it). Otherwise it is an adverb: *Tu y cours* (=thou runnest there.)

93. The **disjunctive personal pronouns**, or pronouns used apart from the verb, are:—

*Singular.*

**Moi** = I; **toi** = thou; **lui, elle** = he, she.

|      |                |                   |                            |
|------|----------------|-------------------|----------------------------|
| Nom. | <b>Moi</b> =I. | <b>toi</b> =thou. | <b>lui, elle</b> =he, she. |
| Gen. | <b>de moi.</b> | <b>de toi.</b>    | <b>de lui, d'elle.</b>     |
| Dat. | <b>à moi.</b>  | <b>à toi.</b>     | <b>à lui, à elle.</b>      |
| Acc. | <b>moi.</b>    | <b>toi.</b>       | <b>lui, elle.</b>          |

*Plural.*

**Nous** = we; **vous** = you; **eux, elles** = they.

|      |                  |                   |                          |
|------|------------------|-------------------|--------------------------|
| Nom. | <b>Nous</b> =we. | <b>vous</b> =you. | <b>eux, elles</b> =they. |
| Gen. | <b>de nous.</b>  | <b>de vous.</b>   | <b>d'eux, d'elles.</b>   |
| Dat. | <b>à nous.</b>   | <b>à vous.</b>    | <b>à eux, à elles,</b>   |
| Acc. | <b>nous.</b>     | <b>vous.</b>      | <b>eux, elles.</b>       |

94. The disjunctive pronouns are always the same, whether used as subject or as object of a verb. They are used as subject only when it is necessary to establish a distinction between two persons or things, or for emphasis: **Lui** *m'a donné de l'argent*, **eux** *m'ont donné à manger* (=he gave me money, they gave me to eat); **moi**, *je vous le dis* (=I tell you so).

95. These pronouns are used in French after the verb **être**, after a preposition or conjunction, and also in answer to questions: *C'est moi* (=it is I); *c'était lui* (=it was he); *ce livre est à moi* (=this book is mine, belongs to me); *il parle contre toi* (=he speaks against you); *il est plus grand que moi* (=he is taller than I); *qui vient là?* **Moi** (=who comes there? I).

In order to give still greater force to the expression, the adjective *même* is joined by a hyphen to these pronouns, as:—

| <i>Singular.</i>                                  | <i>Plural.</i>                 |
|---|--------------------------------|
| <b>moi-même</b> = myself                          | <b>nous-mêmes</b> = ourselves  |
| <b>toi-même</b> = thyself                         | <b>vous-mêmes</b> = yourselves |
| <b>lui-même</b> = himself                         | <b>eux-mêmes</b> } themselves. |
| <b>elle-même</b> = herself                        | <b>elles-mêmes</b> }           |
| <b>soi-même</b> = oneself, himself, herself, etc. |                                |

96. The **reflective personal pronoun** (conjunctive, *se*; disjunctive, *soi*) is used only for the third person, and for both genders and both numbers. The first and second persons are formed with the pronouns given above.

N.B.—In modern French, *soi* is only used when the subject of the verb is *on*, *tout le monde*, *chacun*, etc., or after an impersonal verb.

### Exercise 20:

1. Il travaille avec soin. 2. C'est moi qui irai le voir. 3. Je crois que c'est à toi qu'il parle. 4. Adressez-vous à lui. 5. Elle lui parlera de votre affaire. 6. Je le vois d'ici. 7. Elle est si bonne que je veux la récompenser. 8. Ces fleurs me plaisent

beaucoup. 9. Croyez-mci, consentez-y. 10. J'ai lu votre livre, et j'en parlerai dans la revue.

<sup>1</sup> marche, <sup>2</sup> vojs, <sup>3</sup> voyons, <sup>4</sup> pensez, <sup>5</sup> j'enont, <sup>6</sup> dansent, <sup>7</sup> donnerai, <sup>8</sup> qui plaisent, <sup>9</sup> croyez, <sup>10</sup> récompenser, <sup>11</sup> consens, <sup>12</sup> parlo, <sup>13</sup> venons, <sup>14</sup> en, <sup>15</sup> montr'rai, <sup>16</sup> c'était, <sup>17</sup> parlez, <sup>18</sup> s'excusent-vous de, <sup>19</sup> lohn, <sup>20</sup> allez, <sup>21</sup> allons, <sup>22</sup> font tout, <sup>23</sup> on ne doit jamais parler, <sup>24</sup> flattent, <sup>25</sup> sais.

**Conjunctive pronouns:** 1. I walk;<sup>1</sup> thou seest<sup>2</sup> these flowers; he has read your book; your sisters are very good. 2. She works with much (of) care; we see,<sup>3</sup> you think,<sup>4</sup> they (*masc.*) play,<sup>5</sup> they (*fem.*) dance.<sup>6</sup> 3. I shall give<sup>7</sup> him these flowers which please<sup>8</sup> (to) him. 4. Go and (to) see him. 5. You believe<sup>9</sup> that I wish to recompense<sup>10</sup> her. 6. We have read the review of your book. 7. I consent<sup>11</sup> to it; I speak<sup>12</sup> of him; he has some of them; we come<sup>13</sup> from that place.<sup>14</sup> 8. I will show<sup>15</sup> it to you; don't show it to her.

**Disjunctive pronouns.** 1. It is he; it was<sup>16</sup> I; speak<sup>17</sup> to them (*masc.*); remember<sup>18</sup> them (*fem.*) 2. Far<sup>19</sup> from thee; go<sup>20</sup> with them; let us go<sup>21</sup> there ourselves; they do everything<sup>22</sup> themselves (*fem.*). 3. One should never speak<sup>23</sup> of one's self. 4. They flatter<sup>24</sup> themselves. 5. I who was there (I) know<sup>25</sup> it better than he.

## SECTION II.

### DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

**97. Demonstrative pronouns** are used to point out the person or thing spoken of: *Mon cheval est plus grand que celui-ci* (= my horse is higher than this one).

**98.** The demonstrative pronouns are the following:

|   |                                       |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| SINGULAR.                                   | PLURAL.                               |
| <b>Ce, celui, celle</b> (= this, that, it). | <b>ceux, celles</b> (= these, those.) |

**99.** We have seen (§ 82) that the adverb *ci* is added to the demonstrative adjective to point out an object close to us, and the adverb *là* to indicate another object far from us. Those two adverbs are also, and for the same purpose, joined to the demonstrative pronouns *ce* (but without a hyphen): **ceci** (= this); **cela** (= that); **celui** (with a hyphen) = **celui-ci, celle-ci, celui-là, celle-là; ceux-ci, ceux-là, etc.**

**100. Ce** is a pronoun—

1. When it accompanies a verb: **Ce** doit être son frère (=it must be his brother); est-ce lui? (=is it he?).
2. When it is placed before the pronouns *qui* (=who), *que* (=whom), *quoi* (=what), *dont* (=whose): *J'irai voir ce qui est arrivé* (=I will go and see what has happened); *je ferai ce que vous me demandez* (=I will do what you ask me).

But placed before a noun **ce** is an adjective: **Ce** livre (=this book); **ce** chapeau (=that hat).

*Celui qui* = he who, the one who; *celui que* = he whom, the one whom.

### Exercise 21.

1. Mon livre et celui de mon frère. 2. Ma chaise et celle de ma cousine. 3. Ses crayons et ceux de Guillaume. 4. Vos offres et celles de votre ami. 5. Préférez-vous ce couteau-ci ou celui-là? 6. Gardez ces bottes-là; je choisis celles-ci. 7. Ceci mérite attention. 8. Cela ne vaut rien. 9. Quel est ce monsieur? Ce doit être son colonel. 10. Est-ce bien lui?

<sup>1</sup> préfère, <sup>2</sup> qui faites, <sup>3</sup> commode, <sup>4</sup> mais, <sup>5</sup> ne vaut rien, <sup>6</sup> paire (*/*), <sup>7</sup> choisis, <sup>8</sup> parce que ce doit être, <sup>9</sup> ouvrage (*m.*), <sup>10</sup> récompense (*/*).

1. I prefer<sup>1</sup> these boots to those. 2. Is it you who make<sup>2</sup> those offers? 3. Give me this or that. 4. Your chairs are not so comfortable<sup>3</sup> as those of your friend. 5. These knives are excellent, but<sup>4</sup> this one is good for nothing.<sup>5</sup> 6. Of several pairs<sup>6</sup> of boots, this one or that one? these or those? 7. I choose<sup>7</sup> this book, because it must be<sup>8</sup> an excellent work.<sup>9</sup> 8. Your brother's attention deserves a reward.<sup>10</sup> 9. I do not like that. 10. The one that I show you.

## SECTION III.

### POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

**101. Possessive pronouns** take the place of the noun, and at the same time denote possession: *Mon chapeau est meilleur que le vôtre* (=my hat is better

than yours); *ton cheval est plus noir que le sien* (=thy horse is blacker than his). **Le vôtre, le sien** are possessive pronouns—*pronouns*, because they are used to avoid the repetition of the noun which represents the object, and *possessive*, because they indicate, at the same time, to whom the object belongs.

When one object possessed by **only one** person is spoken of (as *mon chapeau est meilleur que le tien*), the possessive pronouns are:

|            | SINGULAR.                   | PLURAL.                |            |
|------------|-----------------------------|------------------------|------------|
| 1ST PERSON | { MASC. <b>le mien</b> ...  | <b>les miens</b> ...   | } mine     |
|            | { FEM. <b>la mienne</b> ... | <b>les miennes</b> ... |            |
| 2ND PERSON | { MASC. <b>le tien</b> ...  | <b>les tiens</b> ...   | } thine    |
|            | { FEM. <b>la tienne</b> ... | <b>les tiennes</b> ... |            |
| 3RD PERSON | { MASC. <b>le sien</b> ...  | <b>les siens</b> ...   | } his, its |
|            | { FEM. <b>la sienne</b> ... | <b>les siennes</b> ... |            |

*Mien, tien, sien* are softened forms of *mon, ton, son*. In the Middle-Ages the pronouns *mien, tien, sien* could be used as adjectives, that is to say, placed between the article and the name of the possessed object; people said indiscriminately either *mon frère* (=my brother), *ton vassal* (=thy vassal), or *le mien frère, le tien vassal*, etc. This rule soon disappeared, but some remains of it are still found in the modern expressions: *un mien cousin* (=a cousin of mine), *le tien propre*. (=thine own), *une sienne tante* (=an aunt of his), etc.

When an object possessed by **several** persons at the same time is spoken of (as *leur cheval est moins beau que le nôtre* =their horse is not so fine as ours), the possessive pronouns are:

|            | SINGULAR.                   | PLURAL.                   |
|------------|-----------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1ST PERSON | { MASC. <b>le nôtre</b> ... | <b>les nôtres</b> =OURS   |
|            | { FEM. <b>la nôtre</b> ...  |                           |
| 2ND PERSON | { MASC. <b>le vôtre</b> ... | <b>les vôtres</b> =YOURS  |
|            | { FEM. <b>la vôtre</b> ...  |                           |
| 3RD PERSON | { MASC. <b>le leur</b> ...  | <b>les leurs</b> =THEIRS. |
|            | { FEM. <b>la leur</b> ...   |                           |

### Exercise 22.

1. Votre fusil est plus lourd que le mien. 2. J'aime votre maison, mais je n'aime pas la leur. 3. Est-il à ma place ou à la sienne? 4. Voici mes patins; montrez-moi les vôtres. 5. Donnez-moi un morceau de ton gâteau, le mien n'est pas encore mangé.

6. Quels jolis enfants! Sont-ce les vôtres? 7. Le domestique m'a apporté mes lettres et les leurs. 8. Il a parlé à mon colonel et au sien. 9. Je vois souvent vos amis et les siens. 10. Je trouve mon pays meilleur que le vôtre.

<sup>1</sup> domestique (m.), <sup>2</sup> n'est pas encore arrivé, <sup>3</sup> canif (m.), <sup>4</sup> pays (m.), <sup>5</sup> Angle terre (f.), <sup>6</sup> confiance (f.), <sup>7</sup> joli, <sup>8</sup> étang (m.).

1. Your servant<sup>1</sup> is here, but mine has not arrived yet.<sup>2</sup> 2. My colonel's gun is heavier than yours. 3. Is that your pen-knife<sup>3</sup>? No; it is his. 4. (The) France is my country<sup>4</sup>; (the) England<sup>5</sup> is yours. 5. My friend deserves your confidence<sup>6</sup> and theirs. 6. His skates and thine. 7. He speaks to your pretty<sup>7</sup> children and to mine. 8. Your gloves and hers. 9. This pond<sup>8</sup> is smaller than ours. 10. I have read your book and his.

## SECTION IV.

## RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

**102.** Relative pronouns are those which connect the noun or pronoun they stand for with the part of the sentence which follows them: *Le chêne qui ombrage notre cour est très-ancien* (=the oak which over-shades our yard is very old); *le livre que vous m'avez prêté est intéressant* (=the book [which] you have lent me is interesting).

**103.** The word represented by the relative pronoun is called the **antecedent**. In the above examples *chêne* and *livre* are the antecedents of *qui* and of *que*.

The French word *antécédent* comes from the Latin *antecedentem* (= preceding), because it is placed before the relative pronoun.

**104.** The relative pronouns are—

1. **qui** = who, which (applied to persons and things);  
     **de qui** = whose, of or from whom } applied to  
     **à qui** = to whom } persons only;
2. **que**<sup>1</sup> = whom, which, what (persons and things);
3. **quoi** = what (things only) in exclamation and after prepositions;
4. **dont** = whose, of or from whom or which (persons and things);
5. **lequel** = who, which, what (persons and things).

<sup>1</sup> *Que* is spelled *qu'* before a vowel; *qui* is never shortened.

The relative pronouns *qui*, *que*, *quoi*, *dont* are **invariable**, but *lequel* is **variable** :—

## SINGULAR.

| MASC.         | FEM.  |
|---------------|---|
| <i>lequel</i> | <i>laquelle</i> = who, which, what                |
| <i>duquel</i> | <i>de laquelle</i> = of or from whom, which, what |
| <i>auquel</i> | <i>à laquelle</i> = to whom, which, what.         |

## PLURAL.

|                 |   |
|-----------------|---|
| <i>lesquels</i> | <i>lesquelles</i> = who, which, what      |
| <i>desquels</i> | <i>desquelles</i> = of whom, which, what  |
| <i>auxquels</i> | <i>auxquelles</i> = to whom, which, what. |

**105.** REMARK.—**Que**, pronoun, must not be mistaken for *que* adverb or *que* conjunction. *Que* is a pronoun when *lequel*, *laquelle*, *lesquels*, *lesquelles* can be used in its place, as: *la rose que j'ai cueillie ce matin est fanée* (=the rose I gathered this morning is faded) = **laquelle** *j'ai cueillie*.—*Que* is an adverb when it means *how many*, as: **que** *de belles roses j'ai cueillies!* (=how many beautiful roses I have plucked!) And, lastly, *que* is a conjunction when it means neither *lequel* nor *combien*, as: *J'espère que vous réussirez dans votre entreprise* (= I hope [that] you will succeed in your undertaking).

Note that the relative pronouns are often understood in English, but must always be expressed in French.

**106.** The relative pronouns are also used in interrogative sentences, in which case they are called **interrogative pronouns**: **Qui** *êtes-vous?* (= who are you?) **que** *demandez-vous?* (= what do you ask for?) **à quoi** *cela est-il bon?* (= what is the use of that?) **voici deux accusés, lequel** *est coupable?* (= here are two accused persons, which is the guilty one?).

REMARK.—Interrogative pronouns *have no antecedent*.

**Dont** is never used as an interrogative pronoun: **De qui** (not *dont*) *parlez-vous?* (= whom are you speaking of?).

**107.** Besides the interrogative pronouns proper, there is the **interrogative adjective** *quel*, which

preceded a noun or pronoun: **Quel âge avez-vous?** (= what is your age, or how old are you?) **quelle heure est-il?** (= what o'clock is it?) *j'ai des nouvelles à vous apprendre.*—**Quelles sont-elles?** (= I have some news to tell you.—What is it?).

**103. Quel** is variable:—

masc. sing. *quel*  
fem. sing. *quelle*

masc. plur. *quels*  
fem. plur. *quelles*.

### Exercise 23.

1. La personne qui vous connaît. 2. Le marchand que vous avez vu. 3. La bataille dont je parle. 4. En quoi vous ai-je trompé? 5. L'affaire à laquelle il a donné ses soins. 6. Quel âge a cet enfant? 7. De qui vous a-t-il parlé? 8. A quoi vous occupez-vous? 9. La rose que j'ai cueillie. 10. La loi qui est votée.

<sup>1</sup> marchand, <sup>2</sup> parlais hier, <sup>3</sup> failli, <sup>4</sup> s'applique-t-il, <sup>5</sup> cassé, <sup>6</sup> vaisseau (m.), <sup>7</sup> acheté part demain, <sup>8</sup> poème (m.), <sup>9</sup> tout le monde, <sup>10</sup> ministre (m.), <sup>11</sup> bonté, <sup>12</sup> doit, <sup>13</sup> tigre (m.), <sup>14</sup> habitant, <sup>15</sup> dessin, <sup>16</sup> consacrer, <sup>17</sup> traité (m.), <sup>18</sup> lisez, <sup>19</sup> plein, <sup>20</sup> idée (f.)

1. Have you seen the merchant<sup>1</sup> of whom I spoke yesterday<sup>2</sup>?  
2. In what have you failed<sup>3</sup>? 3. To what does he apply himself<sup>4</sup>?  
4. Which of my fans has he broken<sup>5</sup>? 5. The ship<sup>6</sup> (which) he has bought sails to-morrow<sup>7</sup>. 6. The poem<sup>8</sup> of which everybody<sup>9</sup> speaks is by Victor Hugo. 7. The minister<sup>10</sup> to whose kindness<sup>11</sup> he owes<sup>12</sup> his place (f.) 8. The lions (m.) and tigers<sup>13</sup> which inhabit<sup>14</sup> the desert (m.) 9. (The) drawing<sup>15</sup> is an art (m.) to which I devote<sup>16</sup> myself. 10. The treatise<sup>17</sup> you are reading<sup>18</sup> is full<sup>19</sup> of original ideas.<sup>20</sup>

## SECTION V.

### INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

**109. Indefinite pronouns** denote persons or things in a general, vague, and indeterminate manner: **Quelqu'un est venu** (= somebody came); **on nous l'a dit** (= some one told us so); **ne faites pas de mal à autrui** (= do no harm to others).



The indefinite pronouns are—

|  |                                     |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| <b>autrui</b> = other people,<br>others    | <b>quelqu'un</b> = somebody         |
| <b>chacun</b> = every one,                 | <b>rien</b> = something             |
| <b>on (or l'on)</b> = people, one,<br>they | <b>rien ne</b> = nothing            |
| <b>personne</b> = somebody                 | <b>l'un l'autre</b> = one another   |
| <b>personne ne</b> = nobody                | <b>l'un et l'autre</b> = both       |
| <b>quiconque</b> = whoever                 | <b>l'un ou l'autre</b> = either     |
|  | <b>ni l'un ni l'autre</b> = neither |

**110.** **Personne** (from Latin *persona*) is a pronoun (and of the *masculine* gender) when it is not accompanied by an article or adjective, as: **Personne n'est venu** (= no one came); **personne a-t-il jamais parlé comme vous?** (= has any one ever spoken like you?). In all other cases **personne** is a *feminine substantive*: **Cette personne est très-obligeante** (= this person [either man or woman] is very obliging).

**2.** **Rien** is a pronoun when not accompanied by an article or an adjective: **Je n'ai rien vu** (= I have not seen anything). Otherwise, it is a *masculine noun*: **Un songe, un rien, tout lui fait peur** (= a dream, a trifle, everything frightens him). (LA FONTAINE, *Fables*, viii. 11.)

**111.** Some *indefinite adjectives* may be used by themselves, *i.e.* without being placed before a substantive, and are therefore considered as *indefinite pronouns*. Such are **nul**, **plusieurs**, **tout**: **Nul n'est irréprochable** (= no one is blameless); **plusieurs ont pleuré** (= several shed tears); **tout est perdu** (= all [everything] is lost), etc.

The following adjectives may be used as pronouns: **autre**, **certain**, **nul**, **plusieurs**, **tout**.

**REMARK.**—**Certain** is an *indefinite pronoun* in the plural when it means *quelques-uns* (= some persons), as: **Certains l'affirment** (= some persons affirm this).

In answers, **rien** and **personne** do not require the *ne*: **Qu'avez-vous vu? rien** (= what have you seen? nothing).

## Exercise 24.

1. Quelqu'un est venu vous voir. 2. Ne dites jamais du mal d'autrui. 3. Chacun pense que la guerre sera déclarée. 4. Quelconque ouvrira cette porte, sera puni. 5. On dit qu'un incendie a détruit le palais du roi. 6. Ils se sont mordus l'un l'autre. 7. Je n'ai rien entendu. 8. Voici deux bons fouteurs, prenez l'un ou l'autre. 9. J'aime l'un et l'autre. 10. Chacun a fait son devoir.

<sup>1</sup> bonheur (m.), <sup>2</sup> rend, <sup>3</sup> heureux, <sup>4</sup> toujours gai, <sup>5</sup> société (f.), <sup>6</sup> se calomnient, <sup>7</sup> porte (f.), <sup>8</sup> fermé, <sup>9</sup> plaît, <sup>10</sup> coûté plusieurs, <sup>11</sup> mordu, <sup>12</sup> pauvre, <sup>13</sup> sévèrement, <sup>14</sup> erreur (f.), <sup>15</sup> il y avait, <sup>16</sup> qu'y avait-il.

1. The happiness<sup>1</sup> of others makes<sup>2</sup> me happy.<sup>3</sup> 2. One is always merry<sup>4</sup> in your society.<sup>5</sup> 3. They calumniate<sup>6</sup> one another. 4. With<sup>7</sup>er of these doors<sup>7</sup> shall be closed.<sup>8</sup> 5. Neither of these ships pleases<sup>9</sup> me. 6. Each one of these palaces has cost several<sup>10</sup> millions. 7. Whoever has bitten<sup>11</sup> that poor<sup>12</sup> child shall be severely<sup>13</sup> punished. 8. I have seen nothing of the fire. 9. Each one has his opinion. 10. No one is exempt from error.<sup>14</sup> 11. There was<sup>15</sup> nobody; what was there?<sup>16</sup> Nothing; there was nothing.

## QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. Define a *pronoun*.
2. What is the rule for the agreement of pronouns?
3. How many kinds of pronouns are there?
4. Define a *personal pronoun*.
5. Give a list of the personal pronouns, and say where you place the conjunctive; and where the disjunctive?
6. When is *vous* used instead of *tu*?
7. State the difference between, *le, la, les*, articles, and *le, la, les*, pronouns;—between *leur*, adjective, and *leur*, pronoun;—between *en*, pronoun, and *en*, adverb;—between *y*, pronoun, and *y*, adverb.
8. Mention a *compound pronoun*.
9. Give a table of the demonstrative pronouns.
10. When is *ce* a pronoun?—When is it an adjective?
11. Give a list of the *possessive pronouns*.
12. What is meant by a *relative pronoun*?
13. What is an *antecedent*?
14. Remark on the word *que*.
15. What are the *interrogative pronouns*?—What is *quel*?
16. What is the difference between *qui* and *que*, 1° as relative, 2° as interrogative pronouns?
17. Write a table of the *indefinite pronouns*.
18. Remark on *personne*;—on *rien*.
19. Name the *indefinite adjectives used as pronouns*.

beginning

## CHAPTER V.

## OF THE VERB.

**112.** The **verb** is a word which expresses the idea of an *action* or of a *state* which can be ascribed to a person or to a thing: *Le cheval est docile* (=the horse is docile); *le loup mange l'agneau* (=the wolf eats the lamb).

**113.** When we say, *le loup mange l'agneau*, the word *mange* (=eats), which indicates the action performed by the wolf, is called the **verb**; the word *loup* (=wolf), indicating the animal which performs the action, is called the **subject**; the word *agneau* (=lamb), pointing out the animal eaten by the wolf, is called the **complement** (or **object**).

**114.** The word *agneau* (=lamb) is called the **complement** (or **object**) because it *completes* the idea which the verb *mange* (=eats) commences, by indicating what animal the wolf is eating. There are two kinds of complements: the **direct** and the **indirect**.

**115.** The **direct complement** is that which completes the meaning of the verb in a *direct* manner, that is to say, without the aid of any other word: *il aime son père* (=he loves his father). *Son père* is a direct complement.

**116.** The **indirect complement** is that which completes *indirectly* the meaning of the verb, that is to say, with the aid of certain words, such as *à, de, etc.* (=to, of, etc.), which are called **prepositions**: *il obéit à son père, il dépend de son père* (=he obeys his father, he depends on his father), *à son père, de son père* are indirect complements.

There is only one verb properly so called, namely the verb *être*, which expresses existence, and is designated as *substantive verb*; all the other verbs are called *adjective verbs*, because, in addition to the idea of existence, they also describe a *quality*, a manner of being of the subject: thus, *je dors* (=I sleep) is the same as *je suis* (=I am, denoting existence) **dormant** (=sleeping, denoting the quality, the manner of being).

**117.** In studying verbs, we must examine *the stem, the termination, the number, the person, the mood, the tense.* ✕

### 1. Stem.—2. Termination.

**118.** The verb is always formed of two distinct parts: 1st. A part which does not change, called the **stem** (or **root**) of the verb. 2nd. A changeable and variable part, which is called the **termination**. Thus in *je marche, nous marchons, vous marcherez* (=I walk, we walk, you will walk), the stem *march* expresses the action of walking; and the syllables **e, ons, ez, rez**, which follow the stem and mark the different shades of the meaning, are the terminations.

### 3. Numbers.

**119.** Verbs, like nouns, have two **numbers**: the singular, relating to one person and thing alone: *je marche, tu lis, il mange* (=I walk, thou readest, he eats); the plural, when several are alluded to: *nous lisons, vous marchez, ils finissent* (=we read, you walk, they finish).

### 4. Persons.

**120.** The action expressed by the verb can be performed by the person who speaks: *je marche, nous mangeons* (=I walk, we eat); by the person to whom we speak: *tu marches, vous mangez* (=thou walkest, you eat), or by the person of whom we speak: *il lit, ils marchent* (=he reads, they walk). The French language marks these changes of persons, both in the singular and in the plural, by adding for each of them a new termination (**e, ons, ez, etc.**) to the stem of the verb. These different terminations are called in grammar the **persons** of the verb.

### 5. Moods.

**121.** The *mood* is the *manner* in which the verb presents the state or action which it expresses.

*Mood* (=mood) is from the Latin *modus* (*manière*=manner).

There are in French five *moods*: the **indicative**, the **imperative**, the **conditional**, the **subjunctive**, and the **infinitive**.

1. The **indicative** mood merely *indicates* that the action takes place: *je marche, tu lis* (=I walk, thou readest).

2. The **imperative** mood expresses *command*: *marchez, lisons* (=walk, let us read).

3. The **conditional** mood shows that the action would take place, if a certain condition were fulfilled: *je sortirais, s'il faisait beau* (=I should go out, if the weather were fine).

4. The **subjunctive** mood presents the action in a doubtful and uncertain manner, because it always depends upon another action: *je veux que tu viennes* (=I wish you to come). *Que tu viennes* is governed by the verb *je veux*, and depends on it.

5. The **infinitive** mood presents the action simply in a vague, *indefinite* manner, without any distinction of number or person: *lire, faire, remplir* (=to read, to do, to fill).

REMARK.—The *infinitive mood*, which takes no notice of persons, is called the *impersonal mood*; the other moods, which indicate the persons, are called *personal moods*.

### 6. Tenses.

122. The *tense* is the form assumed by the verb to show at what *time*, at what *moment* the action alluded to takes place.

There are three principal tenses: the **past**, the **present**, the **future**.

123. The **present** shows that the action occurs at the time when we are speaking (as, *je lis*=I read); the **past** shows that the action is already performed at the time when we are speaking (as, *j'ai marché*=I have walked); the **future** shows that the action will be performed at some future time (as, *je marcherai*=I shall walk).

124. There is only one *present*, but there are several *past* and several *future* tenses, because every action can be more or less past, more or less future.

*if*

**125.** There are five kinds of *past or perfect* tenses: the *imperfect*, the *preterite* or *past definite*, the *past indefinite*, the *past anterior*, and the *pluperfect*.

1. The **imperfect** expresses an action actually performed, but which was not so, when another action took place: *il lisait lorsque j'entrai* (=he was reading when I came in).

It is also used when speaking of a state or action which was habitual or characteristic: *il venait tous les jours* (=he came [used to come] every day).

2. The **preterite** or **past definite** shows that a thing has been done at a *definite*, determined epoch, which has completely passed at the time when we are speaking: *je chantai hier toute la soirée* (=I sang all last evening).

3. The **past indefinite** expresses an action which has taken place at a *vague*, indefinite epoch: *j'ai lu ce livre autrefois* (=I have read that book formerly).

4. The **pluperfect** (*j'avais lu quand vous êtes entré* = I had read when you entered) is thus called because it doubly expresses the past, by marking that a certain thing was done before another one took place in a past time.

5. The **preterite anterior** marks that the circumstance occurred immediately *before* another one which took place in a past time: *quand j'eus lu ce journal, je sortis* (=as soon as I had read that newspaper, I went out).

**126.** There are two kinds of *future*: the *future simple*, and the *future anterior*.

1. The **future simple** indicates that the thing in question shall be, or shall take place: *je chanterai demain* (=I shall sing to-morrow).

2. The **future anterior** indicates that the thing in question will take place before another one: *quand j'aurai lu ce journal, je sortirai* (=when I have read that newspaper, I shall go out).

## AUXILIARY VERBS.

*4*

**127.** The verbs *avoir* and *être* are called **auxiliary** verbs, because they help in the conjugation of others: *je suis venu* (=I have come), *j'ai dormi* (=I have slept), *4*

**128. Simple tenses** are those which are conjugated without the auxiliary *avoir* or *être*: *j'aime*, *j'aimais*, *que j'aime* (=I love, I loved, that I may love).

The simple tenses are formed by merely adding a termination to the stem.

**129. Compound tenses** are those which are conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir* or *être*: *j'ai aimé*, *j'aurai aimé*, *que j'eusse aimé* (=I have loved, I shall have loved, that I might have loved).

### Conjugation.

**130.** The union of all the tenses of the same verb, with all their numbers and all their persons, is called its **conjugation**.

**131.** There are in French **four** conjugations, which are distinguished by the termination of the infinitive.

The infinitive of the **first** conjugation ends in **-er**, as *aimer* (=to love).

The **second** conjugation has **-ir** for the termination of the infinitive, as *finir* (=to finish); and the imperfect of the indicative ends in **iss-ais**, *je fin-iss-ais* (=I finished).

The verbs in **ir** really include two conjugations: the one, as *finir*, the imperfect of which ends in *issais*, as *je finissais*: the other, as *sentir* (=to feel), the imperfect of which ends in *-ais*, as *je sentais*. We give here the first of these conjugations, which includes more than *three hundred* French verbs, reserving for the chapter on irregular verbs the notice of the second conjugation in **-ir**, which includes only *twenty-eight* verbs.

The **third** conjugation terminates in the infinitive in **-oir**, as *recevoir* (=to receive).

The **fourth** conjugation has for the ending of the infinitive **-re**, as *rompre* (=to break).

The French language includes (if we take the *Dictionnaire de l'Académie* as an authority) about 4000 simple verbs (leaving out the compound ones); of these, 3000 end in **-er**; 280 in **-ir** (with the imperfect in **-issais**); 23 in **-ir** (with the imperfect in **-ais**); 10 verbs in **-oir**; and 50 verbs in **-re**. We thus see that the first conjugation in **-er** includes in itself nine-tenths of the French verbs.

As we shall see (Section 10) the French language creates new verbs with the help of substantives and adjectives, by adding to the former the termination **-er**: *fête, fêter*; *gant, ganter*; *lard, larder*; *camp, camper* (=holiday, to make holiday; glove, to put gloves on; bacon, to lard; camp, to camp); and to the latter the termination **-ir**: *maigre, maigrir*; *cher, chérir*; *bleu, bleuir*; *pâle, pâlir* (=thin, to become thin; dear, to cherish; blue, to make blue; pale, to become pale).

The first conjugation, in **-er**, forms new verbs with *substantives*, the second conjugation, in **-ir**, with *adjectives*. We may, then, designate them as *living* conjugations (*des conjugaisons vivantes*), inasmuch as they are constantly used for the purpose of new formations.

The conjugations in **-oir**, **-re** (and the second in **-ir**) are, on the contrary, incapable of being used to form new verbs, and since the origin of their language, the French have not added one *single verb* in **-oir** or in **-re** to the small number of those bequeathed by the Latin language. These conjugations, which have remained, so to say, barren, can with good reason be called *dead* conjugations (*des conjugaisons mortes*).

This simple distinction of the conjugations into *dead* and *living* shows us at once why 3000 French verbs (out of 4000) are in **-er** and in **-ir**, whilst the three other conjugations put together only include about 90 verbs.

SECTION I.

AUXILIARY VERBS.

**132. Avoir and être** are auxiliaries only when they serve to conjugate another verb, that is to say, when they are followed by a past participle; they have no claim to that designation when they are conjugated by themselves, as: *j'ai un cheval* (=I have a horse); *je suis roi* (=I am king).

**I. Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb AVOIR (=to have).**

INDICATIVE.

| PRESENT.         | PERFECT.             |
|------------------|----------------------|
| (I have)         | (I have had)         |
| J'ai             | J'ai eu              |
| tu as            | tu as eu             |
| il or elle a     | il or elle a eu      |
| nous avons       | nous avons eu        |
| vous avez        | vous avez eu         |
| ils or elles ont | ils or elles ont eu. |

4 - 1

4 - 1

X 7

4 - 7



## IMPERFECT.

*(I had)*

J'avais  
tu avais  
il or elle avnit  
nous avions  
vous aviez  
ils or elles avaient

## PAST DEFINITE.

*(I had)*

J'eus  
tu eus  
il or elle eut  
nous eûmes  
vous eûtes  
ils or elles eurent

## FUTURE.

*(I shall have)*

J'aurai  
tu auras  
il or elle aura  
nous aurons  
vous aurez  
ils or elles auront

## PLUPERFECT.

*(I had had)*

J'avais eu  
tu avais eu  
il or elle avait eu  
nous avions eu  
vous aviez eu  
ils or elles avaient eu.

## PAST ANTERIOR.

*(I had had)*

J'eus eu  
tu eus eu  
il or elle eut eu  
nous eûmes eu  
vous eûtes eu  
ils or elles eurent eu.

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

*(I shall have had)*

J'aurai eu  
tu auras eu  
il or elle aura eu  
nous aurons eu  
vous aurez eu  
ils or elles auront eu.

## CONDITIONAL.

## PRESENT.

*(I should have)*

J'aurais  
tu aurais  
il or elle aurait  
nous aurions  
vous auriez  
ils or elles auraient

## ANTERIOR.

*(I should have had)*

J'aurais eu  
tu aurais eu  
il or elle aurait eu  
nous aurions eu  
vous auriez eu  
ils or elles auraient eu.

## IMPERATIVE.

## PRESENT.

*(Have [thou])*

Aie . . . . .  
ayons . . . . .  
ayez . . . . .

## PERFECT.

*(Have [thou] had)*

Aie eu . . . . .  
ayons eu . . . . .  
ayez eu . . . . .

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

(That I may have)

Que j'aie  
que tu aies  
qu'il or qu'elle ait  
que nous ayons  
que vous ayez  
qu'ils or qu'elles aient

PERFECT.

(That I may have had)

Que j'aie eu  
que tu aies eu  
qu'il or qu'elle ait eu  
que nous ayons eu  
que vous ayez eu  
qu'ils or qu'elles aient eu.

IMPERFECT.

(That I might have)

Que j'eusse  
que tu eusses  
qu'il or qu'elle eût  
que nous eussions  
que vous eussiez  
qu'ils or qu'elles eussent

PLUPERFECT.

(That I might have had)

Que j'eusse eu  
que tu eusses eu  
qu'il or qu'elle eût eu  
que nous eussions eu  
que vous eussiez eu  
qu'ils or qu'elles eussent eu.

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

Avoir (to have)

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Ayant (having)

PERFECT.

Avoir eu (to have had).

PERFECT.

Ayant eu (having had).

PAST (VARIABLE).

Eu, fem. eue.

Exercise 25.

*Indicatif présent.*—J'ai un chapeau neuf. Tu as une robe neuve. Nous avons une grande maison. Vous avez de l'ambition. Ils ont un cheval noir.

*Imparfait.*—J'avais un bon maître. Tu avais une belle bibliothèque. Elle avait une voiture élégante. Nous avions des chagrins. Vous aviez perdu votre temps. Elles avaient des tiroirs pleins de jouets.

*Passé défini.*—J'eus un grand jardin. Il eut un morceau de pain. Nous eûmes une récompense. Ils eurent de la joie.

*Futur.*—J'aurai six paires de bas. Tu auras des raisins. Nous aurons des poires délicieuses. Vous aurez trop de plaisir.

*Conditionnel présent.*—J'aurais un billet pour le convoi de Paris. Elle aurait une robe et un chapeau neuf. Nous aurions un habile jardinier. Ils auraient une récompense.

*Impératif.*—Aie du courage. Ayons un peu de patience. Ayez plus de persévérance.

*Subjonctif présent.*—Que j'aie mon déjeuner. Que tu aies tes lettres. Que vous ayez votre fusil chargé.

*Imparfait.*—Que j'eusse mon épée et mes pistolets. Que tu eusses un grand pouvoir. Qu'elle eût une nombreuse famille. Que nous eussions des embarras. Que vous eussiez des billets de banque. Qu'elles eussent une chambre petite mais propre.

*Temps composés.*—Mon frère a eu une bonne place. Elle avait eu des oiseaux. J'eus eu des fleurs. J'aurai eu mon argent. Nous aurions eu un été magnifique. Que tu aies eu de la prudence. Qu'elles eussent eu une bouteille de vin.

*Infinitif.*—Avoir de l'esprit. Ayant eu du succès.

<sup>1</sup> persévérance (*f.*), <sup>2</sup> place (*f.*), <sup>3</sup> cour (*f.*), <sup>4</sup> poire (*f.*), <sup>5</sup> chapeau (*m.*), <sup>6</sup> comédie (*f.*), <sup>7</sup> choix (*m.*), <sup>8</sup> main (*f.*), <sup>9</sup> laborieux, <sup>10</sup> congé (*m.*), <sup>11</sup> éperon (*m.*), <sup>12</sup> aiguille (*f.*), <sup>13</sup> boîte (*f.*) à ouvrage, <sup>14</sup> loisir (*m.*), <sup>15</sup> lergnon (*m.*), <sup>16</sup> consentement (*m.*), <sup>17</sup> tasse (*f.*), <sup>18</sup> théière (*f.*), <sup>19</sup> rideau (*m.*), <sup>20</sup> chandelier (*m.*), <sup>21</sup> rhume (*m.*), <sup>22</sup> citron (*m.*), <sup>23</sup> malheur (*m.*), <sup>24</sup> dîner (*m.*), <sup>25</sup> verger (*m.*), <sup>26</sup> inquiétude (*f.*), <sup>27</sup> manteau (*m.*), <sup>28</sup> bonheur (*m.*), <sup>29</sup> écharpe (*f.*), <sup>30</sup> argent, <sup>31</sup> nourriture (*f.*), <sup>32</sup> couronne (*f.*).

*Indicative present.*—(I have a sword and (some) pistols.) Thou hast very little (of) patience (*f.*). She has prudence (*f.*). We have more (of) perseverance.<sup>1</sup>

*Imperfect.*—(I had two large gardens.) Thou hadst a bottle of wine. He had a good situation<sup>2</sup> at (the) court.<sup>3</sup> We had some delicious pears.<sup>4</sup> They had new bonnets.<sup>5</sup>

*Perfect.*—(She had a pair of stockings.) We had a ticket for the play.<sup>6</sup> My gardener, who was in the train, had an accident (*m.*).

*Future.*—(I shall have lost my time.) You will have an elegant carriage. They will have their reward.

*Conditional present.*—(I should have my choice.) Thou wouldst have a small room. He would have some bank-notes. We should have some difficulty. You would have some new skates. They would have a quire<sup>2</sup> of paper.

*Imperative.*—(Have (thou) a more industrious<sup>9</sup> pupil.) Let us have our holidays.<sup>10</sup> Have (ye) some melons (*m.*).

*Subjunctive present.*—(That I may have a pair of spurs.<sup>11</sup>) That thou may'st have some needles.<sup>12</sup> That she may have a work-box.<sup>13</sup> That we may have leisure.<sup>14</sup> That you may have more (of) confidence. That they may have eye-glasses.<sup>15</sup>

*Imperfect.*—(That I might have your consent.) That thou mightest have a cup<sup>17</sup> and a tea-pot.<sup>18</sup> That he might have jewels. That she might have curtains<sup>19</sup> in her room. That we might have a candlestick.<sup>20</sup> That you might have a cold.<sup>21</sup> That they might have lemons.<sup>22</sup>

*Compound tenses.* (I have had a misfortune.)<sup>23</sup> Thou hadst had a good dinner.<sup>24</sup> She had had a large orchard.<sup>25</sup> We shall have had much (of) anxiety.<sup>26</sup> You would have had a cloak.<sup>27</sup> That this merchant may have had luck.<sup>28</sup> That she might have had a scarf.<sup>29</sup>

*Infinitive.* (To have money<sup>30</sup> is not always to be happy.) Having food.<sup>31</sup> Having had a crown.<sup>32</sup>

47

## II. Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb ÊTRE (= to be).

### INDICATIVE.

#### PRESENT.

(I am)

Je suis  
tu es  
il or elle est  
nous sommes  
vous êtes  
ils or elles sont

#### PERFECT.

(I have been)

J'ai été  
tu as été  
il or elle a été  
nous avons été  
vous avez été  
ils or elles ont été.

#### IMPERFECT.

(I was)

J'étais.  
tu étais  
il or elle était  
nous étions  
vous étiez  
ils or elles étaient

#### PLUPERFECT.

(I had been)

J'avais été  
tu avais été  
il or elle avait été  
nous avions été  
vous aviez été  
ils or elles avaient été.

#### PAST DEFIN. TENSE.

(I was)

Je fus  
tu fus  
il or elle fut  
nous fûmes  
vous fûtes  
ils or elles furent

#### PAST ANTERIOR.

(I had been)

J'eus été  
tu eus été  
il or elle eut été  
nous eûmes été  
vous eûtes été  
ils or elles eurent été.

#### FUTURE.

(I shall be)

Je serai  
tu seras  
il or elle sera  
nous serons  
vous serez  
ils or elles seront.

#### FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(I shall have been)

J'aurai été  
tu auras été  
il or elle aura été  
nous aurons été  
vous aurez été  
ils or elles auront été.

## AUXILIARY VERBS.

## CONDITIONAL.

## PRESENT.

*(I should be)*

Je serais  
tu serais  
il or elle serait  
nous serions  
vous seriez  
ils or elles seraient

## ANTERIOR.

*(I should have been)*

J'aurais été  
tu aurais été  
il or elle aurait été  
nous aurions été  
vous auriez été  
ils or elles auraient été.

## IMPERATIVE.

## PRESENT.

*(Be [thou])*

Sois . . . . .  
soyons . . . . .  
soyez . . . . .

## PERFECT.

*(Have [thou] been)*

Aie été . . . . .  
Ayons été . . . . .  
Ayez été . . . . .

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

*(That I may be)*

Que je sois  
que tu sois  
qu'il or qu'elle soit  
que nous soyons  
que vous soyez  
qu'ils or qu'elles soient

## PERFECT.

*(That I may have been)*

Que j'aie été  
que tu aies été  
qu'il or qu'elle ait été  
que nous ayons été  
que vous ayez été  
qu'ils or qu'elles aient été.

## IMPERFECT.

*(That I might be)*

Que je fusse  
que tu fusses  
qu'il or qu'elle fût  
que nous fussions  
que vous fussiez  
qu'ils or qu'elles fussent

## PLUPERFECT.

*(That I might have been)*

Que j'eusse été  
que tu eusses été  
qu'il or qu'elle eût été  
que nous eussions été  
que vous eussiez été  
qu'ils or qu'elles eussent été.

## INFINITIVE.

## PRESENT.

Être *(to be)*

## PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Étant *(being)*

## PERFECT.

Avoir été *(to have been).*

## PERFECT.

Ayant été *(having been).*

## PAST (INVARIABLE).

Été *(been).*

## Exercice 26.

*Indicatif présent.*—Je suis malade. Tu es savant. Il est malheureux. Elle est joyeuse. Nous sommes laborieux. Vous êtes modestes. Ils sont oisifs. Elles sont oisives.

*Imparfait.*—J'étais prudent. Tu étais timide. Il était honteux. Elle était honteuse. Nous étions discretes. Vous étiez studieux. Ils étaient jaloux. Vos sœurs étaient jalouses.

*Passé défini.*—Je fus son ami intime. Tu fus mon plus grand ennemi. Elle fut excellente musicienne. Nous fûmes généreux. Vous fûtes ingrats. Elles furent cruelles.

*Futur.*—Je serai général en chef. Il sera mis à mort. Elle sera estimée. Nous serons fidèles à notre pays. Vous serez dans des craintes continuelles. Ils seront inquiets.

*Conditionnel présent.*—Je serais prêt. Tu serais turbulent. Il serait déshant. Elle serait sûre. Nous serions fermes. Vous seriez frivoles. Ils seraient entêtés. Elles seraient soigneuses.

*Impératif.*—Sois tranquille. Soyez charitables. Soyons amis. Soyez obéissants. Soyons libres. Soyez gaies.

*Subjonctif présent.*—Que je sois moins impatient. Que tu sois un bon citoyen. Qu'il soit toujours puissant. Qu'elle soit soumise à ses parents. Que nous soyons sobres. Que vous soyez crédules. Qu'ils soient opiniâtres.

*Imparfait.*—Que je fusse ferme et courageux. Que tu fusses économe. Qu'il fût modéré. Que nous fussions hospitaliers. Que vous fussiez trompés. Qu'elles fussent satisfaites.

*Temps composés.*—Tu as été trop prompt. Elle avait été prise. Nous eûmes été invités. Vous aurez été moqueurs. Ils auraient été plus généreux. Que j'aie été volé. Qu'elles eussent été précoces.

*Infinitif.*—Pour être heureux il faut avoir la conscience tranquille. Étant battu, je me retire.

§ 33 The pupil must be careful to observe here the rules for the place of adjectives; see § 64, Note.

<sup>1</sup> in-lisret, <sup>2</sup> obstiné, <sup>3</sup> ridicule, <sup>4</sup> capricieux, <sup>5</sup> reconnaissant, <sup>6</sup> emporté, <sup>7</sup> appliqué, <sup>8</sup> moqueur, <sup>9</sup> sage, <sup>10</sup> humble, <sup>11</sup> malhonnête, <sup>12</sup> infirme, <sup>13</sup> content, <sup>14</sup> compatissant, <sup>15</sup> bienveillant, <sup>16</sup> timide, <sup>17</sup> enflé, <sup>18</sup> découragé, <sup>19</sup> faible, <sup>20</sup> posé, <sup>21</sup> battu, <sup>22</sup> prudent à l'avenir, <sup>23</sup> ennuyeux, <sup>24</sup> soupçonné, <sup>25</sup> couguis, <sup>26</sup> trompé, <sup>27</sup> tub, <sup>28</sup> chagrin, <sup>29</sup> commande, <sup>30</sup> devint, <sup>31</sup> ré.

*Indicative present.*—I am obedient. Thou art ready. He is charitable. She is impatient. We are moderate. You are in continual fears. They are inconsiderate.

*Imperfect.*—(I was a distrustful man.) Thou wast obstinate.<sup>8</sup> She was firm. We were ridiculous.<sup>9</sup> You were whimsical.<sup>4</sup> These soldiers were brave.

*Past definite.*—(I was jealous.) Thou wast grateful.<sup>5</sup> He was studious. We were hasty.<sup>6</sup> You were attentive. My sisters were diligent.<sup>7</sup>

*Future.*—(I shall be sarcastic.)<sup>3</sup> Thou wilt be a rich man. She will be a wise<sup>9</sup> woman. We shall be humane.<sup>10</sup> You will be unpolite.<sup>11</sup> They will be ridiculous.

*Conditional present.*—(I should be firm.) Thou wouldst be cruel. She would be infirm.<sup>12</sup> We should be pleased.<sup>13</sup> You would be discreet. They would be kind.

*Imperative.*—(Be indulgent.) Let us be compassionate.<sup>14</sup> Let us be benevolent.<sup>15</sup>

*Subjunctive present.*—(That I may be very timid.)<sup>16</sup> That thou may'st be too conceited.<sup>17</sup> That she may be discouraged.<sup>18</sup> That we may be weak.<sup>19</sup> That you may be steady.<sup>20</sup> That they may be dumb.

*Imperfect.*—(That I might be beaten.)<sup>21</sup> That he might be respectable. (That he might be cautious for the future.)<sup>22</sup> That they might be tedious.<sup>23</sup>

*Compound tenses.*—(I have been absent.) Thou hadst been suspected.<sup>24</sup> She had been quiet. We shall have been conquered.<sup>25</sup> You would have been deceived.<sup>26</sup> That I may have been happy. That he might have been killed.<sup>27</sup>

*Infinitive.*—(To be sorrowful.)<sup>28</sup> Being the master, I order<sup>29</sup> here. Having been deceived, he became<sup>30</sup> more reserved.<sup>31</sup>

### QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. Define the *verb*, the *subject*, the *direct complement* or *object*, the *indirect complement* or *object*.
2. What is the *substantive verb*? What is meant by an *adjective verb*?
3. What is the *stem*? the *termination*?
4. When is the verb put in the singular? when in the plural?
5. How many persons are there? how many moods?
6. Explain the force of every one of the moods?
7. What is meant by a *personal mood*?
8. What is an *impersonal mood*?
9. How many kinds of *perfect* are there? What is expressed by the *imperfect*, the *past definite*, etc.?
10. How many kinds of *future* are there?
11. Define *simple tense*;—a *compound tense*.
12. Give a list of the French conjugations, and explain how they are distinguished from each other.
13. When are *avoir* and *être* auxiliary verbs?

## SECTION II.

## ACTIVE VERBS.

**133.** There are in French five kinds of verbs: the *active* verb, the *neuter* verb, the *passive* verb, the *reflective* verb, and the *impersonal* verb.

**134.** The *active* verb expresses the action performed by the subject, and is followed by a direct object: *J'aime votre frère* (=I love your brother).

The active verb is also called *transitive* (from the Latin *transire* =to pass over from one place to another), because the action is transmitted from the subject to the object: *Le loup mange l'agneau* (=the wolf eats the lamb), *je récompense cet enfant* (=I reward this child).

**135.** We now give a model of the four conjugations of French verbs, taking care to point out, by different types, the stem from the termination.

I. First Conjugation.—Verb **AIMER** (=to love).

Stem, **aim**; termination, **er**.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT.

(*I love*)

J'aime  
tu aimes  
il or elle aime  
nous aimons  
vous aimez  
ils or elles aiment.

## PAST INDEFINITE.

(*I have loved*)

J'ai aimé  
tu as aimé  
il or elle a aimé  
nous avons aimé  
vous avez aimé  
ils or elles ont aimé.

## IMPERFECT.

(*I was loving*)

J'aimais  
tu aimais  
il or elle aimait  
nous aimions  
vous aimiez  
ils or elles aimaient.

## PLUPERFECT.

(*I had loved*)

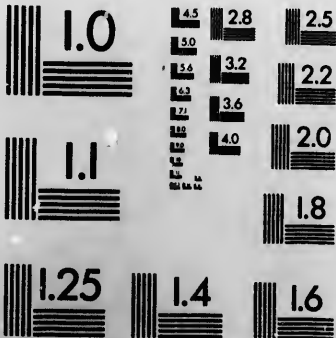
J'avais aimé  
tu avais aimé  
il or elle avait aimé  
nous avions aimé  
vous aviez aimé  
ils or elles avaient aimé.





# MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)



**APPLIED IMAGE Inc**

1653 East Main Street  
Rochester, New York 14609 USA  
(716) 482 - 0300 - Phone  
(716) 289 - 5989 - Fax

## PAST DEFINITE.

*(I loved)*

J'aimai  
tu aimas  
il or elle aim**a**  
nous aimâmes  
vous aimâtes  
ils or elles aimèrent.

## FUTURE.

*(I shall love)*

J'aimerai  
tu aimeras  
il or elle aimera  
nous aimerons  
vous aimerez  
ils or elles aimeront

## PRESENT.

*(I should love)*

J'aimerais  
tu aimerais  
il or elle aimera**it**  
nous aimerions  
vous aimeriez  
ils or elles aimeraient

## PRESENT.

*(Love thou)*

Aime . . . . .  
aimons . . . . .  
aimez . . . . .  
. . . . .

## PRESENT.

*(That I may love)*

Que j'aime  
que tu aimes  
qu'il or qu'elle aime  
que nous aimons  
que vous aimiez  
qu'ils or qu'elles aiment

## PAST ANTERIOR.

*(I had loved)*

J'eus aimé  
tu eus aimé  
il or elle eut aimé  
nous eûmes aimé  
vous eûtes aimé  
ils or elles eurent aimé.

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

*(I shall have loved)*

J'aurai aimé  
tu auras aimé  
il or elle aura aimé  
nous aurons aimé  
vous aurez aimé  
ils or elles auront aimé.

## CONDITIONAL.

## ANTERIOR.

*(I should have loved)*

J'aurais or j'eusse aimé  
tu aurais or tu eusses aimé  
il or elle aurait or eût aimé  
nous aurions or eussions aimé  
vous auriez or eussiez aimé  
ils or elles auraient or eussent aimé.

## IMPERATIVE.

## PERFECT.

*(Have [thou] loved)*

Aie aimé . . . . .  
ayons aimé . . . . .  
ayez aimé . . . . .  
. . . . .

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PERFECT.

*(That I may have loved)*

Que j'aie aimé  
que tu aies aimé  
qu'il or qu'elle ait aimé  
que nous ayons aimé  
que vous ayez aimé  
qu'ils or qu'elles aient aimé.

## IMPERFECT.

*(That I might love)*

Que j'**aimasse**  
 que tu **aimasses**  
 qu'il or qu'elle **aimât**  
 que nous **aimassions**  
 que vous **aimassiez**  
 qu'ils or qu'elles **aimassent**

## PLUPERFECT.

*(That I might have loved)*

Que j'**eusse aimé**  
 que tu **eusses aimé**  
 qu'il or qu'elle **eût aimé**  
 que nous **eussions aimé**  
 que vous **eussiez aimé**  
 qu'ils or qu'elles **eussent aimé**.

## INFINITIVE.

## PRESENT.

**Aimer** *(to love)*

## PERFECT.

**Avoir aimé** *(to have loved)*.

## PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

**Aimant** *(loving)*

## PERFECT.

**Ayant aimé** *(having loved)*.

## PAST (VARIABLE).

**Aimé, fem. aimée** *(loved)*.

et → - -

**Exercice 27.**

*Indicatif présent.*—J'aime mon père. Tu adores Dieu. Il alarme le pays. Elle danse très-bien. Nous apportons de bonnes nouvelles. Vous arrosez le jardin. Ils attaquent l'ennemi.

*Imparfait.*—Je balayais l'école. Il baignait le lit. Elle brodait sa robe. Nous cachetions la lettre. Vous trouviez votre thème. Ils condamnaient ma conduite.

*Passé défini.*—Je récompensai le domestique. Tu donnas ta parole. Il discuta la question. Elle consola sa mère. Nous contentâmes notre maître. Vous remarquâtes les fautes. Ils décaichèrent la lettre.

*Futur.*—Je déciderai la question. Tu tueras un canard. Il déclarera la guerre. Elle dînera avec vous. Nous aimerons les bons. Vous détromperez ma sœur. Ils différeront la punition.

*Conditionnel présent.*—Je fréquenterais la bonne compagnie. Tu dévoilerais le complot. Il graverait ce tableau. Elle humilierait votre orgueil. Nous imprimerions une grammaire. Vous oublieriez mes torts envers vous. Ils réformeraient leurs lois.

*Impératif.*—Sacrifie ton intérêt au bien public. Débrouillez cette affaire. Terminons ce livre. Apaisez sa colère. Evitons le danger.

*Subjonctif présent.*—Que je donne ce joujou à votre fils. Que tu blâmes sa conduite. Qu'il propose un avis salutaire. Que nous admirions la beauté de ce paysage. Que vous pensiez à mes malheurs. Qu'ils oublient une circonstance essentielle.

*Imparfait.*—Que je surmontasse les obstacles. Que tu consolasses les pauvres. Qu'il renforçât le parti. Que nous fermassions

les volets. Que vous racontassiez cette charmante histoire. Qu'ils surveillaient ce méchant homme.

*Infinitif.*—Trop parler nuit. Il faut avoir traversé le désert.

*Participes.*—En patinant hier, il s'est cassé la jambe.

*Temps composés.*—J'ai chanté deux airs. Tu avais montré trop de talent. Il eut fermé la porte. Nous aurons dépensé trois mille fraucs. Vous auriez passé la journée chez des amis. Quo j'aie hésité à vous défendre. Que tu eusses manqué à tous tes devoirs.

<sup>1</sup> troure, <sup>2</sup>fortifier, <sup>3</sup>débrouiller, <sup>4</sup> offense (*f.*), <sup>5</sup> punition (*f.*), <sup>6</sup> un avis salutaire, <sup>7</sup> dévoiler, <sup>8</sup> complot (*m.*), <sup>9</sup> vertueux, <sup>10</sup> proposer, <sup>11</sup> plancho (*f.*), <sup>12</sup> de nusée (*m.*), <sup>13</sup> ote (*f.*), <sup>14</sup> armer, <sup>15</sup> les pauvres, <sup>16</sup> trop, <sup>17</sup> voler, <sup>18</sup> juste, <sup>19</sup> moyen d'être, <sup>20</sup> glace (*f.*), <sup>21</sup> à travers, <sup>22</sup> col (*m.*), <sup>23</sup> surveiller, <sup>24</sup> départ (*m.*).

*Indicative present.*—I speak (the) French. Thou skatest very well. He shows much (of) talent. Our troops <sup>1</sup> strengthen <sup>2</sup> your party (*m.*). We print a grammar. You unravel <sup>3</sup> my affairs (*f.*)

*Imperfect.*—I thought of your misfortunes. Thou wast crossing the wilderness. He related a charming history. We were shutting the shutters (*m.*). You were mending your conduct. He was discussing the question (*f.*).

*Past definite.*—Your sister sang ye <sup>1</sup> ay. I forgot all your offences. <sup>2</sup> Thou avoidedst a great danger. We spent more (of) money than you. You forgot your punishment. <sup>3</sup>

*Future.*—I shall give you some sound advice. <sup>4</sup> Thou wilt undeceive my sister. He will expose <sup>5</sup> the plot. <sup>6</sup> You will frequent the company of (the) virtuous <sup>7</sup> men. They will propose <sup>8</sup> three questions.

*Conditional present.*—I would sweep the school. Thou shouldst alarm the camp (*m.*). He would give these toys to my children. We would water their flower-beds <sup>1</sup> in the garden. You should love your parents. He should engrave the best pictures in <sup>2</sup> the museum. <sup>3</sup>

*Imperative.*—Worship God. Let us notice the mistakes in this exercise. <sup>1</sup> Shut your books.

*Subjunctive present.*—That I may kill a goose. <sup>1</sup> That thou may'st warm the bed. <sup>2</sup> That she may think of us when she is in France. That we may breakfast this morning with our friends. That you may arm <sup>3</sup> all the troops. That you may visit the poor. <sup>4</sup>

*Imperfect.*—(That I might condemn her conduct. That thou mightest satisfy thy kind mother.) That she might scold her servants. That we might spend too much. <sup>1</sup> That you might steal <sup>2</sup> my letter. That they might weep.

*Infinitive.*—(To sing in tune<sup>19</sup> is an essential quality. To have confessed one's faults is the best means of being<sup>20</sup> pardoned.)

*Participles.*—(I have seen you breaking the ice<sup>21</sup> in the garden. Passing through<sup>22</sup> the camp.)

*Compound tenses.*—(I have avoided this wicked man. Thou hadst embroidered my collar.<sup>23</sup>) He had watched over<sup>24</sup> that child. We shall have dined. You would have postponed your departure.<sup>25</sup> That they may have observed all the circumstances. That I might have admired the landscape.

## II. Second Conjugation.—Verb **FINIR** (=to finish).

Stem, *fin*; termination, *ir*.

### INDICATIVE.

#### PRESENT.

(*I finish*)

Je **finis**  
tu **finis**  
il or elle **finit**  
nous **finissons**  
vous **finissez**  
ils or elles **finissent**

#### IMPERFECT.

(*I was finishing*)

Je **finissais**  
tu **finissais**  
il or elle **finissait**  
nous **finissions**  
vous **finissiez**  
ils or elles **finissaient**

#### FAST DEFINITE.

(*I finished*)

Je **finis**  
tu **finis**  
il or elle **finit**  
nous **finîmes**  
vous **finîtes**  
ils or elles **finirent**

#### FUTURE.

(*I shall finish*)

Je **finirai**  
tu **finiras**  
il or elle **finira**  
nous **finirons**  
vous **finirez**  
ils or elles **finiront**

#### PAST INDEFINITE.

(*I have finished*)

J'ai **fini**  
tu as **fini**  
il or elle a **fini**  
nous avons **fini**  
vous avez **fini**  
ils or elles ont **fini**

#### PLUPERFECT.

(*I had finished*)

J'avais **fini**  
tu avais **fini**  
il or elle avait **fini**  
nous avions **fini**  
vous aviez **fini**  
ils or elles avaient **fini**

#### PAST ANTERIOR.

(*I had finished*)

J'eus **fini**  
tu eus **fini**  
il or elle eut **fini**  
nous eûmes **fini**  
vous eûtes **fini**  
ils or elles eurent **fini**

#### FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(*I shall have finished*)

J'aurai **fini**  
tu auras **fini**  
il or elle aura **fini**  
nous aurons **fini**  
vous aurez **fini**  
ils or elles auront **fini**

## ACTIVE VERBS.

## CONDITIONAL.

## PRESENT.

*(I should finish)*

Je finirais  
tu finirais  
il or elle finirait  
nous finirions  
vous finiriez  
ils or elles finiraient

## PRESENT.

*(Finish [thou])*

Finis . . . . .  
finissons . . . . .  
finissez . . . . .  
. . . . .

## ANTERIOR.

*(I should have finished)*

J'aurais or j'eusse fini  
tu aurais or tu eusses fini  
il or elle aurait or eût fini  
nous aurions or eussions fini  
vous auriez or eussiez fini  
ils or elles auraient or eussent fini

## IMPERATIVE.

## PERFECT.

*(Have [thou] finished)*

Aie fini . . . . .  
ayons fini . . . . .  
ayez fini . . . . .  
. . . . .

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

*(That I may finish)*

Que je finisse  
que tu finisses  
qu'il or qu'elle finisse  
que nous finissions  
que vous finissiez  
qu'ils or qu'elles finissent

## IMPERFECT.

*(That I might finish)*

Que je finisse  
que tu finisses  
qu'il or qu'elle finit  
que nous finissions  
que vous finissiez  
qu'ils or qu'elles finissent

## PERFECT.

*(That I may have finished)*

Que j'aie fini  
que tu aies fini  
qu'il or qu'elle ait fini  
que nous ayons fini  
que vous ayez fini  
qu'ils or qu'elles aient fini.

## PLUPERFECT.

*(That I might have finished)*

Que j'eusse fini  
que tu eusses fini  
qu'il or qu'elle eût fini  
que nous eussions fini  
que vous eussiez fini  
qu'ils or qu'elles eussent fini.

## INFINITIVE.

## PRESENT.

Finir *(to finish)*

## PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Finissant *(finishing)*

## PERFECT.

Avoir fini *(to have finished)*.

## PERFECT.

Ayant fini *(having finished)*.

## PAST (VARIABLE).

Fini, fem. finie *(finished)*.

277

## Exercice 28.

*Indicatif présent.*—Je punis les coupables. Il adoucit le cœur. Vous applauditsez à ce qu'il dit.

*Imparfait.*—J'avertissais votre frère de son danger. Nous bannissions les méchants de notre société.

*Passé défini.*—Tu réussis dans ton entreprise. Vous désobéîtes à votre maître. Ils envahirent le pays.

*Futur.*—Je finirai mon ouvrage ce soir. Il garnira cette chambre de tableaux. Nous jouirons des plaisirs de la campagne.

*Conditionnel présent.*—Tu trahirais mes intérêts. Nous enrichirions notre famille. Elles compatiraient à nos malheurs.

*Impératif.*—Polis ces cuillers. Attendez-vous ce cœur inflexible.

*Subjonctif présent.*—Que j'établisse ma réputation. Qu'il affaiblisse son parti. Que vous renchérissez ces marchandises.

*Imparfait.*—Que tu les affermisses dans leur devoir. Que nous abolissions ces impôts. Qu'ils asservissent les nations étrangères.

*Infinitif.*—Je puis fournir ce travail. Avoir assorti ces couleurs.

*Participes.*—En punissant les coupables, j'ai rempli un véritable devoir.

*Temps composés.*—Tu as approuvé ces enfants. Ce cheval avait henné. Vous auriez accompli cette tâche.

<sup>1</sup> chérir, <sup>2</sup> droits (m.), <sup>3</sup> société (f.), <sup>4</sup> répartir, <sup>5</sup> fléchir, <sup>6</sup> coup (m.), <sup>7</sup> tonnerre (m.), <sup>8</sup> contir, <sup>9</sup> fournir, <sup>10</sup> de charbon, <sup>11</sup> rôtir, <sup>12</sup> gigot (m.), <sup>13</sup> Espagne (f.), <sup>14</sup> aplaître, <sup>15</sup> répartir, <sup>16</sup> paroisse (f.), <sup>17</sup> échelle (f.), <sup>18</sup> chagrin (m.), <sup>19</sup> accomplir, <sup>20</sup> subir, <sup>21</sup> approfondir, <sup>22</sup> cirer, <sup>23</sup> musique (f.).

*Indicative present.*—(Thou cherishest<sup>1</sup> thy parents. We abolish the duties<sup>2</sup> on those goods.) You strengthen them in their duty.

*Imperfect.*—(I finished<sup>3</sup> this book. She enjoyed the pleasures of (the) society.<sup>4</sup>) We distributed<sup>5</sup> the provisions (f.).

*Past definite.*—(He bent<sup>6</sup> under the blow.<sup>7</sup> The thunder<sup>8</sup> re-sounded.) You supplied<sup>9</sup> our house with<sup>10</sup> coal.

*Future.*—(Thou wilt betray<sup>11</sup> the party. We shall roast<sup>12</sup> a leg<sup>13</sup> of mutton.) They will invade (the) Spain.<sup>14</sup>

*Conditional present.*—(I would smooth<sup>15</sup> the difficulties. He would assess<sup>16</sup> the taxes of the parish.<sup>17</sup>) They would establish their reputation.

*Imperative.*—(Polish all the forks. Strengthen this ladder.<sup>18</sup>)

*Subjunctive present.*—(That thou mayest enslave the nation. That we may soften his grief.<sup>19</sup>) That the fruit may rise in price.

*Imperfect.*—(That I might discharge<sup>20</sup> my duty. That she might undergo<sup>21</sup> the punishment.) That you might unfurnish the room.



*Infinitive.*—(To finish this book before a month is impossible.)  
*Participles.*—(By examining into<sup>21</sup> this question, you will find that the laws have been established.)  
*Compound tenses.*—(I have filled these drawers.<sup>22</sup> We shall have applauded that beautiful music.<sup>23</sup>) That he might have been warned.

### III. Third Conjugation.—Verb RECEVOIR (=to receive).

Stem, recev; termination, oir.

4 1 1 1 1

#### INDICATIVE.

##### PRESENT.

(I receive)

Je reçois  
 tu reçois  
 il or elle reçoit  
 nous recevons  
 vous recevez  
 ils or elles reçoivent

##### PERFECT.

(I have received)

J'ai reçu  
 tu as reçu  
 il or elle a reçu  
 nous avons reçu  
 vous avez reçu  
 ils or elles ont reçu.

##### IMPERFECT.

(I was receiving)

Je recevais  
 tu recevais  
 il or elle recevait  
 nous recevions  
 vous receviez  
 ils or elles recevaient

##### PLUPERFECT.

(I had received)

J'avais reçu  
 tu avais reçu  
 il or elle avait reçu  
 nous avions reçu  
 vous aviez reçu  
 ils or elles avaient reçu.

##### PAST DEFINITE.

(I received)

Je reçus  
 tu reçus  
 il or elle reçut  
 nous reçûmes  
 vous reçûtes  
 ils or elles reçurent

##### PAST ANTERIOR.

(I had received)

J'eus reçu  
 tu eus reçu  
 il or elle eut reçu  
 nous eûmes reçu  
 vous eûtes reçu  
 ils or elles eurent reçu.

##### FUTURE.

(I shall receive)

Je recevrai  
 tu recevras  
 il or elle recevra  
 nous recevrons  
 vous recevrez  
 ils or elles recevront

##### FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(I shall have received)

J'aurai reçu  
 tu auras reçu  
 il or elle aura reçu  
 nous aurons reçu  
 vous aurez reçu  
 ils or elles auront reçu.

## CONDITIONAL.

## PRESENT.

*(I should receive)*

Je recevrais  
tu recevrais  
il or elle recevrait  
nous recevriions  
vous recevriez  
ils or elles recevraient

## ANTERIOR.

*(I should have received)*

J'aurais or j'eusse reçu  
tu aurais or tu eusses reçu  
il or elle aurait or eût reçu  
nous aurions or eussions reçu  
vous auriez or eussiez reçu  
ils or elles auraient or eussent  
reçu.

## IMPERATIVE.

## PRESENT.

*(Receive [thou])*

Reçois . . .  
recevons . . .  
recevez . . .

## PERFECT.

*(Have [thou] received)*

Aie reçu . . .  
ayons reçu . . .  
ayez reçu . . .

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

*(That I may receive)*

Que je reçoive  
que tu reçoives  
qu'il or qu'elle reçoive  
que nous recevions  
que vous receviez  
qu'ils or qu'elles reçoivent

## PERFECT.

*(That I may have received)*

Que j'aie reçu  
que tu aies reçu  
qu'il or qu'elle ait reçu  
que nous ayons reçu  
que vous ayez reçu  
qu'ils or qu'elles aient reçu.

## IMPERFECT.

*(That I might receive)*

Que je reçusse  
que tu reçusses  
qu'il or qu'elle reçût  
que nous reçussions  
que vous reçussiez  
qu'ils or qu'elles reçussent

## PLUPERFECT.

*(That I might have received)*

Que j'eusse reçu  
que tu eusses reçu  
qu'il or qu'elle eût reçu  
que nous eussions reçu  
que vous eussiez reçu  
qu'ils or qu'elles eussent reçu.

## INFINITIVE.

## PRESENT.

Recevoir *(to receive)*

## PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Recevant *(receiving)*

## PERFECT.

Avoir reçu *(to have received)*.

## PERFECT.

Ayant reçu *(having received)*.

## PAST (VARIABLE).

Reçu, *sem. reçue* *(received)*.

## Exercise 29.

*Indicatif présent.*—Je conçois comment cela est arrivé. Il aperçoit votre intention. Nous redonnons le loyer de notre maison.

*Imparfait.*—Tu recevais tes livres. Vous déceviez ses espérances. Ils percevaient mes revenus.

*Passé défini.*—Je reçus une visite de votre oncle. Elle conçut un grand projet. Nous aperçûmes le voleur.

*Futur.*—Tu recevras demain une lettre de mon ami. Vous concevrez un nouveau projet. Ils apercevront pisément si le thème est bien fait.

*Conditionnel présent.*—Il recevrait les arrérages. Je devrais écrire ce devoir. Vous apercevriez son erreur.

*Impératif.*—Conçois l'importance de cette affaire. Recevez mes remerciements de toutes vos bontés.

*Subjonctif présent.*—Qu'il perçoive l'intérêt de cet argent. Que nous recevions son télégramme. Qu'elles redoivent le montant du billet.

*Imparfait.*—Que je redusse une bagatelle. Que vous décuissiez mes plus chères espérances. Que nous reçussions ce tribut d'estime.

*Infinitif.*—Apercevoir des défauts dans autrui est chose facile.

*Participes.*—En recevant cette demande, le roi a fait un acte de justice. Les impôts sont perçus.

*Temps composés.*—Je l'ai reçu hier. Il a aperçu mon frère. Vous auriez aperçu le clocher de l'église. Que tu eusses conçu l'étendue de ses projets.

*Exercice.*  
 'gouvernement (m.), \*profondeur (f.), \*trahison (f.), \*ergaison (f.), \*politesse (f.) \*dessin (m.), \*bouquet (m.), \*tout à fait, \*désirer, \*montrer, \*juste, \*mériter, \*billet (m.), \*tache (f.), \*drap (m.).

*Indicative present.*—(I perceive your mistake. You collect the taxes for the government.) They receive a tribute (in) money.

*Imperfect.*—(He perceived his situation. We owed again a sum of seventy francs.) They deceived my fondest hopes.

*Past definite.*—(I conceived the depth<sup>1</sup> of his treachery.<sup>2</sup> You received a cargo<sup>3</sup> of goods.) We perceived the steeple of the church.

*Future.*—(Thou wilt owe many (of) thanks to thy friend. She will receive your message (m).) They will conceive a plan (m).

*Conditional present.*—(I should receive him with politeness.<sup>4</sup> Thou wouldst receive a telegram.) We should perceive the house.

*Imperative.*—(Receive my sincere thanks. Let us conceive a better design.)

*Subjunctive present.*—(That we may receive the nosegay.<sup>7</sup> That he may collect the arrears.) That they may owe less.

*Imperfect.*—(That I might understand my lesson thoroughly.<sup>8</sup> I wished<sup>9</sup> that you might perceive your danger.) That we might conceive the importance of his duties.

*Infinitive.*—(To receive this man is to show<sup>10</sup> one's contempt of what is right.<sup>11</sup>)

*Participles.*—(In deceiving me you have deserved<sup>12</sup> to be punished.)

*Compound Tenses.*—(I had received your note.<sup>13</sup> She had perceived his intentions.) That I might have perceived a stain<sup>14</sup> on that cloth.<sup>15</sup>

#### IV. Fourth Conjugation.—Verb **ROMPRE** (= to break).

*Stem, romp ; termination, re.*

#### INDICATIVE.

##### PRESENT.

(I break)

Je romps  
tu romps  
il or elle rompt  
nous rompons  
vous rompez  
ils or elles rompent

##### IMPERFECT.

(I was breaking)

Je rompais  
tu rompais  
il or elle rompait  
nous rompions  
vous rompiez  
ils or elles rompaient

##### PAST DEFINITE.

(I broke)

Je rompis  
tu rompis  
il or elle rompit  
nous rompîmes  
vous rompîtes  
ils or elles rompirent

##### PERFECT.

(I have broken)

J'ai rompu  
tu as rompu  
il or elle a rompu  
nous avons rompu  
vous avez rompu  
ils or elles ont rompu.

##### PLUPERFECT.

(I had broken)

J'avais rompu  
tu avais rompu  
il or elle avait rompu  
nous avions rompu  
vous aviez rompu  
ils or elles avaient rompu.

##### PAST ANTERIOR.

(I had broken)

J'eus rompu  
tu eus rompu  
il or elle eut rompu  
nous eûmes rompu  
vous eûtes rompu  
ils or elles eurent rompu.

## ACTIVE VERBS.

## FUTURE.

*(I shall break)*

Je romprai  
tu rompras  
il or elle rompra  
nous romprons  
vous romprez  
ils or elles rompront

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

*(I shall have broken)*

J'aurai rompu  
tu auras rompu  
il or elle aura rompu  
nous aurons rompu  
vous aurez rompu  
ils or elles auront rompu.

## CONDITIONAL.

## PRESENT.

*(I should break)*

Je romprais  
tu romprais  
il or elle romprait  
nous romprions  
vous romtriez  
ils or rompraient

## ANTERIOR.

*(I should have broken)*

J'aurais or j'eusse rompu  
tu aurais or tu eusses rompu  
il or elle aurait or eût rompu  
nous aurions or eussions rompu  
vous auriez or eussiez rompu  
ils or elles auraient or eussent rompu.

## IMPERATIVE.

## PRESENT.

*(Break [thou])*

Romps . . . .  
. . . . .  
rompons . . . .  
rompez . . . . .  
. . . . .

## PERFECT.

*(Have [thou] broken)*

Aie rompu . . . .  
. . . . .  
ayons rompu . . . .  
ayez rompu . . . . .  
. . . . .

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

*(That I may break)*

Que je rompe  
que tu rompes  
qu'il or qu'elle rompe  
que nous romptions  
que vous rompiez  
qu'ils or qu'elles rompent

## PERFECT.

*(That I may have broken)*

Que j'aie rompu  
que tu aies rompu  
qu'il or qu'elle ait rompu  
que nous ayons rompu  
que vous ayez rompu  
qu'ils or qu'elles aient rompu.

## IMPERFECT.

*(That I might break)*

Que je rompisse  
que tu rompisses  
qu'il or qu'elle rompît  
que nous rompiissions  
que vous rompiez  
qu'ils or qu'elles rompiissent

## PLUPERFECT.

*(That I might have broken)*

Que j'eusse rompu  
que tu eusses rompu  
qu'il or qu'elle eût rompu  
que nous eussions rompu  
que vous eussiez rompu  
qu'ils or qu'elles eussent rompu.

## ACTIVE VERBS.

## INFINITIVE.

**PRESENT.**  
Rompre (to break)

**PARTICIPLE PRESENT.**  
Rompuant (breaking)

**PAST (VARIABLE).**  
Rompu, fem. rompue (broken).

## PERFECT.

Avoir rompu (to have broken)

## PERFECT.

Ayant rompu (having broken)

**PAST (VARIABLE).**

Rompu, fem. rompue (broken).

## Exercise 30.

*Indicatif présent.*—J'attends de la compagnie aujourd'hui. Il répond correctement. Vous défendez votre patrie.

*Imparfait.*—Tu suspendais ton jugement. Ce chien mordait tout le monde. Vous prétendiez à sa place.

*Passé défini.*—Il condescendit à ses désirs. Nous fondimes le plomb. Ils tendirent leurs bras.

*Futur.*—Je répondrai à votre lettre. Il entendra ce qu'ils disent. Elles vendront leur maison de campagne.

*Conditionnel présent.*—Tu tordrais la corde. Nous confondrions leur orgueil. Ils prendraient leurs chapeaux dans le vestiaire.

*Impératif.*—Entends leur justification. Attendons l'arrivée du bateau à vapeur.

*Subjonctif présent.*—Que tu vendes ces fruits trop cher. Que vous répandiez l'eau sur le tapis. Qu'ils tendent cette corde.

*Imparfait.*—Que je tendisse au même but. Que nous fondissions la presse. Que vous entendissiez le bruit du tonnerre.

*Infinitif.*—Prétendre savoir toutes choses est ridicule.

*Participes.*—En fendant ce morceau de bois, je me suis blessé. La cause entendue, le président prononça la sentence.

*Temps composés.*—J'ai vendu tous mes livres. Vous aviez entendu ces deux règles. Il aura répondu à mon appel.

<sup>1</sup> immédiatement, <sup>2</sup> régulièrement, <sup>3</sup> tendre à, <sup>4</sup> but (m.), <sup>5</sup> défendre, <sup>6</sup> usage (m.), <sup>7</sup> correspondre, <sup>8</sup> séance (f.), <sup>9</sup> linge (m.), <sup>10</sup> terres (f.), <sup>11</sup> chapeau (m.), <sup>12</sup> convention (f.), <sup>13</sup> fendre, <sup>14</sup> toute la journée, <sup>15</sup> regarder, <sup>16</sup> chien (m.), <sup>17</sup> ne devriez pas, <sup>18</sup> bruit (m.), <sup>19</sup> confondre, <sup>20</sup> raison (f.), <sup>21</sup> arme (f.), <sup>22</sup> grand escalier (m.)

4 *Indicative présent.*—I am coming down immediately.<sup>1</sup> He answers my letters very regularly.<sup>2</sup> We are aiming at<sup>3</sup> a difficult end.<sup>4</sup>

*Imparfait.*—I was forbidding<sup>5</sup> him the use<sup>6</sup> of it. She was writing. You were confounding<sup>7</sup> this rule with another.

*Past definite.*—(He) corresponded<sup>8</sup> with your friends. We suspended the meeting.<sup>9</sup> She wrung the linen<sup>10</sup> in the garden.

*Futur.*—It shall sell all my estates.<sup>11</sup> She will take her bonnet.<sup>12</sup> You will break the agreement.<sup>13</sup>

*Conditional present.*—(Thou wouldst answer my letters. We should recast the poem.) They would hear us.

*Imperative.*—(Split<sup>13</sup> the wood. Let us hang up our coats in the cloak room.)

*Subjunctive present.*—(That I may wait all day long.<sup>14</sup> That we should sell all the jewels.) That you should stretch this rope.

*Imperfect.*—(That she might shear the sheep. That I might scatter<sup>15</sup> flowers on his path.<sup>16</sup>) That they might defend their interests.

*Infinitive.*—(You should not<sup>17</sup> sell your goods so dear.)

*Participles.*—(Hearing this rumour<sup>18</sup> I went out. His insolence (*f*) was brought to confusion.<sup>19</sup>)

*Compound tenses.*—(I had heard his reasons.<sup>20</sup> We should have melted into tears.<sup>21</sup> Thou wouldst have waited. That I might have come down by the principal staircase.<sup>22</sup>)

## SECTION III.

*CONJUGATION OF VERBS.* 1. Interrogatively; 2. Negatively; 3. Interrogatively with a negative.

136. If we wish to conjugate these verbs *interrogatively* we have only to displace the pronoun, putting it (in the simple tenses) after the verb: *aimez-vous?* (=do you love?), or in the compound tenses, between the auxiliary and the past participle: *ai-je aimé?* (=have I loved?), *avais-je aimé?* (=had I loved?), *aurai-je aimé?* (=shall I have loved?) etc.

137. If the first person singular ends in an *e* mute (*j'aime*=I love; *que je puisse*=that I may be able), that *e* mute is replaced by a close *é*: *aime-je?* (=do I love?) *puissé-je?* (=may I?).

138. When the third person singular ends with a vowel, as is the case for the first conjugation (*il aime*=he loves; *il va*=he goes) a *t*, called euphonic, is placed between the verb and the pronoun (*aime-t-il*, *va-t-il?* =does he love, does he go?)

The old French always had a *t* at the end of the third person, and said *il aime<sup>t</sup>*, *il va<sup>t</sup>*, without sounding the *t*. This letter, being mute, disappeared from the direct conjugation; but it persisted in the interrogative one, on account of the following vowel. This *t*, which is called *euphonic t*, and which is joined to the verb by a hyphen, was therefore really, in former times, part of the verb.

**139. Est-ce que** (=is it that) is also used in asking questions, especially with verbs of one syllable: **est-ce que je vends?** (=do I sell?) **est-ce que vous aimez cette ville?** (=do you like this town?). Then the verb is put in the affirmative.

In sentences like: You see it, do you not? You will do it, will you not? You have not done it, have you? the interrogation is in every case expressed in French by **n'est-ce pas?** *Vous le voyez, n'est-ce pas?* *Vous le ferez, n'est-ce pas?* *Vous ne l'avez pas fait, n'est-ce pas?*

**140.** When in a question the verb has a noun for the subject, as: Is your friend here? the noun is placed first, as in the affirmation, and the pronoun (of the same gender, number, and person as the noun) is placed after the verb to show that the sentence is interrogative: **Votre ami est-il ici?** (=is your friend here?) **Vos amis sont-ils ici?** (=are your friends here?).

**141.** In order to conjugate the verbs in the negative form (with the negative *ne...pas*, *ne...point*), it suffices that we should place *ne* between the pronoun and the verb, and *pas* after the verb, for the simple tenses: **je ne veux pas** (=I do not wish); **tu ne veux pas** (=thou dost not wish) etc. In the compound tenses, the word *pas* is placed between the auxiliary and the participle: **je n'ai pas voulu** (=I have not wished); **je n'aurais pas voulu** (=I would not have wished) etc. With the infinitive, *pas* generally comes before the verb: **pour ne pas faire cela** (=not to do that).

**142.** To conjugate a verb interrogatively with a negative, *ne* is placed before the verb and *pas* after the pronoun following the verb: **ne vois-je pas?** (=do I not see?). In the compound tenses *ne* comes before the auxiliary, and *pas* after the pronoun following the auxiliary: **n'ai je pas vu?** (=have I not seen?)

A table of these conjugations will be found at page 156.

**Exercise 3**

**Indicatif présent.**—Préféré-je cet ouvrage? Il ne finit pas ses devoirs. Ne recevons-nous pas son avis avec reconnaissance?

**Imparfait.**—Demeurais-tu à Londres? Il ne renchérissait pas ses marchandises. N'entendaient-ils pas le bruit de la voiture? Vous aimiez cette ville, n'est-ce pas?

gratitude

voiture

47

4-1-7

We  
the  
we  
ght  
eir  
(s.)  
ve  
ht  
2.  
g  
?  
n  
e  
e  
e  
t  
)  
t  
4

end



*Passé défini.*—Conçut-elle toute l'importance de cette démarche? N'aima-t-il pas son séjour à la campagne? Vous <sup>terminés</sup> <sup>terminés</sup> terminés votre gloire par votre cruauté.

*Futur.*—Est-ce que nous ne profiterons pas d'une occasion aussi favorable? Vous ne réussirez jamais à le persuader. Vos amis ne vendront-ils pas leur propriété?

*Conditionnel présent.*—Je n'agirais pas contre ma conscience. Choisiriez-vous ce cheval? Ne recevriez-vous pas du monde demain?

*Impératif.*—Ne reçois jamais de ses lettres.

*Subjonctif présent.*—Que je ne rende compte à personne.

*Imparfait.*—Que ce chemin n'aboutit pas au château.

*Infinitif.*—Ne pas me répondre est une preuve d'impertinence.

*Participes.*—N'ayant pas trahi sa patrie, il est plein de confiance.

*Temps composées.*—Avez-vous chanté ce matin? Il n'avait pas démolé cette chaumière. N'eurent-ils pas aperçu le vaisseau dans le port? Je n'aurais jamais condescendu à une telle demande. N'auront-ils ni livres ni papiers? Qu'elle n'ait pas d'argent. Que nous ne fussions pas dénués de ressources.

<sup>1</sup> cave (*f.*), <sup>2</sup> revendre, <sup>3</sup> voiture (*f.*), <sup>4</sup> antrefois, <sup>5</sup> projet (*m.*), <sup>6</sup> négliger, <sup>7</sup> rénsir, <sup>8</sup> réfléchir à, <sup>9</sup> proposition (*f.*), <sup>10</sup> rendre, <sup>11</sup> arc (*m.*), <sup>12</sup> ternir, <sup>13</sup> céder, <sup>14</sup> louer, <sup>15</sup> cloche (*f.*), <sup>16</sup> honorablement, <sup>17</sup> tromper, <sup>18</sup> critiquer, <sup>19</sup> sévèrement.

*Indicative present.*—Do you answer (to) his letter? He does not finish his picture. Do they not dine?

*Imperfect.*—Was I going down into the cellar? We did not resell<sup>2</sup> this carriage.<sup>3</sup> Did they not correspond formerly<sup>4</sup>?

*Perfect definite.*—I had no money. She did not burst into tears. Did he not perceive my design<sup>5</sup>?

*Future.*—I shall never neglect<sup>6</sup> my duties. They will succeed,<sup>7</sup> will they not? Will you recast your work?

*Conditional.*—I would not disobey. Would your friend reflect on<sup>8</sup> that proposal<sup>9</sup>? Would they negotiate that treaty?

*Imperative.*—Do not return<sup>10</sup> (to) him his letter.

*Subjunctive present.*—That I may not owe this sum.

*Imperfect.*—That they might not stretch that bow.<sup>11</sup>

*Infinitive.*—Not to sully<sup>12</sup> your reputation (*f.*), confess your fault.

*Participles.*—Not having yielded,<sup>13</sup> he was praised<sup>14</sup> by the journal.

*Compound tenses.*—I have not heard the bell.<sup>15</sup> Wast thou acting honourably?<sup>16</sup> Did she not sell her estates? I shall not have received this dangerous man. Would she not have rewarded the merit of that pupil? That they may not have deceived<sup>17</sup> you. That we might not have criticised<sup>18</sup> him too severely.<sup>19</sup>

## SECTION IV.

## REMARKS ON THE FORMATION OF THE TENSES.

**143.** Notice that in the first person of the present indicative the verbs in **-er** do not take an *s* (*je chante*), while the other conjugations do (*je finis, je romps*).

This exception is a vestige of the Old French language: the first person formerly never took an *s*: *j'aime, je vci, je rend* (= I love, I see, I restore); about the beginning of the sixteenth century, an *s* was added, by analogy with the *s* of the second person *tu chantes, tu lis, tu vois* (= thou singest, thou readest, thou seest); but the first conjugation escaped this assimilation, and even in the case of the other conjugations, the forms without *s* still remained for a long time in the language of poetry. Thus we find in the seventeenth century: *je voi, je li, je croi*. (LA FONTAINE, MOLIÈRE, CORNEILLE.)

**144.** The imperfect is the same in all conjugations (*-ais, -ais, -ait, -ions, -iez, -aient*), always remembering that the conjugation in **-ir** interpolates the particle **-iss** between the root and the termination: *je fin-iss-ais, tu fin-iss-ais*.

Before the time of Voltaire, the imperfect was always written with the syllable *ois* (*j'aimois, je chantois, etc.*) instead of *ais*. It was he who first wrote: *j'aimais, je chantais, etc.* This orthographical modification was only adopted by the Academy in 1835. A century before Voltaire, in 1675, an obscure lawyer, Nicolas Béruin, had already asked for this reform.

**145.** The future is formed throughout all the conjugations in the same manner, that is to say, by adding to the infinitive of the verb the indicative present of the verb *avoir* (*ai, as, a, etc.*).

*Je chanterai* is therefore exactly equivalent to *j'ai à chanter*; hence: *aimerai, as, a*. In the plural, however, the syllable *ai* is struck out: *aimer- (av) ons, aimer- (av) ez, aimer-ont*. The third conjugation is an exception to this rule, as the termination *oir* is shortened into *r*: *je recev-r-ai*.

The conditional present is formed in the same way from the imperfect indicative, the syllable *av* being suppressed: *j'aimer- (av) ais*.

**146.** It will be observed that all the persons of the imperative are borrowed from the corresponding persons of the indicative present. The only exception

ARR

is in the first conjugation, which has *chante* without an *s*, whilst *finis*, *reçois*, *romps* retain the *s* of the indicative (*tu finis*, *tu reçois*, *tu romps*). But the *s* of *chante* is expressed, and reappears when the imperative is placed before a word beginning with a vowel, such as *y* or *en*: *chantes-en une partie* (=sing part of it), *vas-y voir* (=go there and see), etc.

147. The tenses of the verbs are divided into **primitive** and **derivative**. From the five primitive tenses all the others are formed in the following manner:—

The PRESENT INFINITIVE FORMS

- 1. The future, see § 145.
- 2. The conditional, see § 145.

The PRESENT PARTICIPLE "

- 1. The plural of the present indicative: *aimant*, *aimons*, *aimez*, *aiment*.
- 2. The imperfect indicative: *finissant*, *finissais*, etc.
- 3. The present subjunctive *finissant*, *finisse*, *finis*, except the 3rd conjugation, in which *o* reappears: *recevant*, *recevois*.

The PAST PARTICIPLE "

- All the compound tenses with the auxiliary *avoir* or *être*.

The PRESENT INDICATIVE "

- the imperative, see § 146.

The PAST DEFINITE "

- The imperfect subjunctive, by adding *se* to the second person singular: *tu aimas*, *aimasse*.

148. **Idiomatic tenses.**—Besides the tenses given in the models for the four conjugations, the French use others which are made up with the verbs *aller* (=to go), *venir* (=to come), and *devoir* (=to owe, to be obliged, must). Here is a list of these tenses:—

1. PAST JUST ELAPSED.

(I have just spoken)

Je viens de parler  
tu viens de parler  
il vient de parler  
nous venons de parler  
vous venez de parler  
ils viennent de parler.

2. PAST DEFINITE ANTERIOR.

(I had just spoken)

Je venais de parler  
tu venais de parler  
il venait de parler  
nous venions de parler  
vous veniez de parler  
ils venaient de parler.

Handwritten marks: a large 'X' on the left margin, and some scribbles at the bottom right.

3. FUTURE PROXIMATE.

(*I am going to speak*)

Je vais parler  
tu vas parler  
il va parler  
nous allons parler  
vous allez parler  
ils vont parler.

4. FUTURE DEFINITE.

(*I am to, or I must, or I intend to speak*)

Je dois parler  
tu dois parler  
il doit parler  
nous devons parler  
vous devez parler  
ils doivent parler.

5. FUTURE IMPERFECT ANTERIOR.

(*I was going to speak*)

J'allais parler  
tu allais parler  
il allait parler  
nous allions parler  
vous alliez parler  
ils allaient parler.

6. CONDITIONAL IMPERFECT.

(*I was to, or I intended to speak*)

Je devais parler  
tu devais parler  
il devait parler  
nous devions parler  
vous deviez parler  
ils devaient parler.

7. CONDITIONAL FUTURE.\*

(*I ought to, or I should speak*)

Je devrais parler  
tu devrais parler  
il devrait parler  
nous devrions parler  
vous devriez parler  
ils devraient parler.

8. CONDITIONAL ANTERIOR.\*

(*I ought to, or I should have spoken*)

J'aurais dû parler  
tu aurais dû parler  
il aurait dû parler  
nous aurions dû parler  
vous auriez dû parler  
ils auraient dû parler.

There is also a past tense with *devoir*, expressing either obligation or supposition—

J'ai dû parler } = I have had to speak, or must (surely) have  
tu as dû parler } = thou hadst to speak, &c. [spoken.

The verb *faire* (=to do, to make), is frequently used as an auxiliary, and is also followed (like the above) by the present infinitive: *il a fait faire un habit* (=he has ordered, caused to be made, a coat, or he has had a coat made).

\* In translating into French any sentence in which *shall, will, should, would, may, might* are used, the pupil should be very careful to distinguish whether those words simply express a future or a subjunctive, or whether they express a duty, a strong intention, or a capacity; in the latter case they must be translated literally into French, *shall, should* by *devoir*; *will, would* by *vouloir* and *may, might*, by *peuvent*, according to the examples given above.

## QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. How many kinds of verbs are there?
2. What is an *active* verb?—By what other name is it known?
3. Write the subjunctive present of *aimer, chanter, devoir, rendre*; the past definite of *agir, recevoir, vendre*; the conditional past of *parler* and *définir*.
4. How is a verb conjugated interrogatively?
5. Remark on the following moods and tenses: the *indicative present*, the *imperfect indicative*, the *future*, the *conditional*, the *imperative*.
6. Conjugate negatively the future simple of *parler, douter, recevoir*; the conditional past of *gémir, devoir, chanter*.
7. Conjugate: 1. interrogatively; 2. interrogatively with a negative, the indicative present of *agir*; the past definite of *dévoir*.
8. What are the primitive tenses, and what tenses do they form?
9. Give a list of the idiomatic tenses.

## SECTION V.

## PASSIVE VERBS.

149. The passive verb expresses an action suffered by the subject: *l'agneau a été mangé par le loup* (=the lamb has been eaten by the wolf).

Every active verb can become passive, that is to say, it can be employed in the passive form. *Manger* (=to eat) is active in *le chat mange la souris* (=the cat eats the mouse); it becomes passive in *la souris est mangée par le chat* (=the mouse is eaten by the cat).

NOTE.—The French seldom use the passive verb. They employ instead the active verb with an indefinite pronoun for subject: *on vend le sucre quarante centimes la livre* (=sugar is sold at forty centimes a pound), or they use the reflexive verb. (See § 160.)

150. There is only one form of conjugation for the passive verbs; it consists of the auxiliary *être*, followed (in all its moods, tenses, and persons) by the *past participle* of the verb we wish to conjugate: *je suis mordu* (=I am bitten); *j'ai été mordu* (=I have been bitten); *je serai mordu* (=I shall be bitten), etc.

151. Care must be taken to make the past participle always agree with the subject of the verb: *il est mordu* (=he is bitten); *elle est mordue* (=she is bitten); *ils sont mordus* (=they are bitten), etc.

Conjugation of the Passive Verb **ÊTRE AIMÉ**  
(= to be loved).

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT.

(I am loved)

|                   |   |                 |
|-------------------|---|-----------------|
| Je suis           | } | aimé or aimée   |
| tu es             |   |                 |
| il or elle est    | } | aimés or aimées |
| nous sommes       |   |                 |
| vous * êtes       |   |                 |
| ils or elles sont |   |                 |

## PAST INDEFINITE.

(I have been loved)

|                      |   |                 |
|----------------------|---|-----------------|
| J'ai été             | } | aimé or aimée   |
| tu as été            |   |                 |
| il or elle a été     |   |                 |
| nous avons été       | } | aimés or aimées |
| vous avez été        |   |                 |
| ils or elles ont été |   |                 |

## IMPERFECT.

(I was loved)

|                      |   |                 |
|----------------------|---|-----------------|
| J'étais              | } | aimé or aimée   |
| tu étais             |   |                 |
| il or elle était     | } | aimés or aimées |
| nous étions          |   |                 |
| vous étiez           |   |                 |
| ils or elles étaient |   |                 |

## PLUPERFECT.

(I had been loved)

|                          |   |                 |
|--------------------------|---|-----------------|
| J'avais été              | } | aimé or aimée   |
| tu avais été             |   |                 |
| il or elle avait été     | } | aimés or aimées |
| nous avions été          |   |                 |
| vous aviez été           |   |                 |
| ils or elles avaient été |   |                 |

## PAST DEFINITE.

(I was loved)

|                     |   |                 |
|---------------------|---|-----------------|
| Je fus              | } | aimé or aimée   |
| tu fus              |   |                 |
| il or elle fut      | } | aimés or aimées |
| nous fûmes          |   |                 |
| vous fûtes          |   |                 |
| ils or elles furent |   |                 |

## PAST ANTERIOR.

(I had been loved)

|                         |   |                 |
|-------------------------|---|-----------------|
| J'eus été               | } | aimé or aimée   |
| Tu eus été              |   |                 |
| il or elle eut été      | } | aimés or aimées |
| nous eûmes été          |   |                 |
| vous eûtes été          |   |                 |
| ils or elles eurent été |   |                 |

## FUTURE.

(I shall be loved)

|                     |   |                 |
|---------------------|---|-----------------|
| Je serai            | } | aimé or aimée   |
| tu seras            |   |                 |
| il or elle sera     | } | aimés or aimées |
| nous serons         |   |                 |
| vous serez          |   |                 |
| ils or elles seront |   |                 |

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(I shall have been loved)

|                         |   |                 |
|-------------------------|---|-----------------|
| J'aurai été             | } | aimé or aimée   |
| tu auras été            |   |                 |
| il or elle aura été     | } | aimés or aimées |
| nous aurons été         |   |                 |
| vous aurez été          |   |                 |
| ils or elles auront été |   |                 |

\* When *vous* (=you) is used, out of politeness, instead of *tu* (=thou), the past participle remains, of course, in the singular (either masculine or feminine).

## CONDITIONAL.

## PRESENT.

*(I should be loved)*

|                       |   |                  |
|-----------------------|---|------------------|
| Je serais             | } | aimé or aimée    |
| tu serais             |   |                  |
| il or elle serait     | } | aimés or aimées. |
| nous serions          |   |                  |
| vous seriez           |   |                  |
| ils or elles seraient |   |                  |

## ANTERIOR.

*(I would have been loved)*

|                           |   |                  |
|---------------------------|---|------------------|
| J'aurais été              | } | aimé or aimée    |
| tu aurais été             |   |                  |
| il or elle aurait été     | } | aimés or aimées. |
| nous aurions été          |   |                  |
| vous auriez été           |   |                  |
| ils or elles auraient été |   |                  |

## IMPERATIVE.

## PRESENT.

*(Be loved)*

|                    |   |                  |
|--------------------|---|------------------|
| Sois aimé or aimée | } | aimés or aimées. |
| Soyons             |   |                  |
| Soyez              |   |                  |
| .....              |   |                  |

## PERFECT.

*(Have [thou] been loved)*

|                       |   |                  |
|-----------------------|---|------------------|
| Aie été aimé or aimée | } | aimés or aimées. |
| Ayons été             |   |                  |
| Ayez été              |   |                  |
| .....                 |   |                  |

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

*(That I may be loved)*

|                           |   |                  |
|---------------------------|---|------------------|
| Que je sois               | } | aimé or aimée    |
| que tu sois               |   |                  |
| qu'il or qu'elle soit     | } | aimés or aimées. |
| que nous soyons           |   |                  |
| que vous soyez            |   |                  |
| qu'ils or qu'elles soient |   |                  |

## PERFECT.

*(That I might have been loved)*

|                              |   |                  |
|------------------------------|---|------------------|
| Que j'aie été                | } | aimé or aimée    |
| que tu aies été              |   |                  |
| qu'il or qu'elle ait été     | } | aimés or aimées. |
| que nous ayons été           |   |                  |
| que vous ayez été            |   |                  |
| qu'ils or qu'elles aient été |   |                  |

## IMPERFECT.

*(That I might be loved)*

|                            |   |                  |
|----------------------------|---|------------------|
| Que je fusse               | } | aimé or aimée    |
| que tu fusses              |   |                  |
| qu'il or qu'elle fût       | } | aimés or aimées. |
| que nous fussions          |   |                  |
| que vous fussiez           |   |                  |
| qu'ils or qu'elles fussent |   |                  |

## PLUPERFECT.

*(That I might have been loved)*

|                                |   |                  |
|--------------------------------|---|------------------|
| Que j'eusse été                | } | aimé or aimée    |
| que tu eusses été              |   |                  |
| qu'il or qu'elle eût été       | } | aimés or aimées. |
| que nous eussions été          |   |                  |
| que vous eussiez été           |   |                  |
| qu'ils or qu'elles eussent été |   |                  |

## INFINITIVE.

## PRESENT.

*(To be loved)*

Être aimé or aimé

## PERFECT.

*(To have been loved)*

Avoir été aimé or aimé.

47

## PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

(Being loved)

Étant aimé or aimée

## PERFECT.

(Having been loved)

Ayant été aimé or aimée.

## PAST (VARIABLE).

Aimé, fem. aimée (loved).

## Exercise 32.

Write affirmatively in the passive voice: the indicative present of *aimer, recevoir, vendre, finir*; the subjunctive present of *travailler, devoir, répandre, définir*.

Write negatively in the same voice: the imperfect subjunctive of *concevoir, répandre, éblouir, monter*; the conditional present of *entendre, critiquer, obéir, concevoir*.

Write interrogatively in the same voice: the perfect definite of *consoler, nourrir, apercevoir, confondre*; the future anterior of *rendre, décevoir, munir, tourmenter*.

Write interrogatively with a negative in the same voice: the pluperfect indicative of *tromper, désobéir, recevoir, rendre*; the conditional past of *décevoir, obéir, blâmer, fondre*.

## QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. What is a passive verb?</li> <li>2. Describe the formation of a passive verb.</li> <li>3. How many conjugations of passive verbs are there?</li> <li>4. Remark on the participle of passive verbs.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>5. Write the subjunctive present, the conditional past, and the future anterior of the passive verbs: <i>être trompé, être bûtu, être reçu, être battu</i>.</li> <li>6. What do the French often use instead of the passive verb?</li> </ol> |
|---|---|

## SECTION VI.

## NEUTER VERBS.

152. A neuter verb is one which expresses the state or the action of the subject, but which has no direct complement or object: *Je tombe* (=I fall), *nous languissons* (=we languish).

The neuter verb is also called *intransitive*, because it does not transmit the action to a complement.

153. The simple tenses of the neuter verbs are the same as those of the active ones. The compound tenses of the neuter verbs are formed, sometimes with the help of the auxiliary *être*: *Je suis arrivé* (=I have



arrived), sometimes with the help of the auxiliary **avoir**: *j'ai dormi* (= I have slept).

There are only twelve neuter verbs which are conjugated with the auxiliary **être**. They are the following: *aller* (= to go); *arriver* (= to arrive); *décéder* (= to die); *échoir* (= to fall due); *éclore* (= to be hatched); *entrer* (= to enter); *mourir* (= to die); *naître* (= to be born); *partir* (= to go away); *sortir* (= to go out); *tomber* (= to fall, and its compound *retomber* = to fall again); *venir* (= to come, and its compounds: *devenir* [= to become]; *intervenir* [= to interfere]; *parvenir* [= to succeed]; *revenir* [= to come back]; *surrevenir* [= to arrive unexpectedly]).

**154.** When the neuter verbs are conjugated with the auxiliary **être**, the participle always agrees with the subject or nominative: *il est arrivé* (= he has arrived), *elle est arrivée* (= she has arrived), *ils sont arrivés* (= they have arrived), etc.

**Conjugation of the verb TOMBER (= to fall).**

*Stem, tomb ; termination, er.*

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT

(*I fall*)

Je tombe  
tu tombes  
il or elle tombe  
nous tombons  
vous tombez  
ils or elles tombent

PERFECT.

(*I have fallen*)

Je suis }  
tu es } tombé or tombée  
il or elle est }  
nous sommes }  
vous êtes } tombés or  
ils or elles sont } tombées

IMPERFECT.

(*I was falling*)

Je tombais  
tu tombais  
il or elle tombait  
nous tombions  
vous tombiez  
ils or elles tombaient

PLUPERFECT.

(*I had fallen*)

J'étais }  
tu étais } tombé or  
il or elle était } tombée  
nous étions }  
vous étiez } tombés or  
ils or elles étaient } tombées

PAST DEFINITE.

(*I fell*)

Je tombai  
tu tombas  
il or elle tomba  
nous tombâmes  
vous tombâtes  
ils or elles tombèrent

PAST ANTERIOR.

(*I had fallen*)

Je fus }  
tu fus } tombé or tombée  
il or elle fut }  
nous fûmes }  
vous fûtes } tombés or  
ils or elles furent } tombées

FUTURE.

(*I shall fall*)

Je tomberai  
tu tomberas  
il or elle tombera  
nous tomberons  
vous tomberez  
ils or elles tomberont.

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(*I shall have fallen*)

Je serai } tombé or tombée  
tu seras }  
il or elle sera }  
nous serons } tombés or  
vous serez } tombées.  
ils or elles seront }

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.

(*I should fall*)

Je tomberais  
tu tomberais  
il or elle tomberait  
nous tomberions  
vous tomberiez  
ils or elles tomberaient.

ANTERIOR.

(*I should have fallen*)

Je serais } tombé or  
tu serais } tombée  
il or elle serait }  
nous serions } tombés or  
vous seriez } tombées.  
ils or elles seraient }

IMPERATIVE.

PRESENT.

Fall [*thou*]

Tombe . . . .  
tombons . . . .  
tombez . . . .  
. . . . .

PERFECT.

(*Have [thou] fallen*)

Sois tombé or tombée  
soyons } tombés or tombées.  
soyez }  
. . . . .

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

(*That I may fall*)

Que je tombe  
que tu tombes  
qu'il or qu'elle tombe  
que nous tombions  
que vous tombiez  
qu'ils or qu'elles tombent.

PERFECT.

(*That I may have fallen*)

Que je sois } tombé or  
que tu sois } tombée  
qu'il or qu'elle soit }  
que nous soyons } ombés or  
que vous soyez } ombées  
qu'ils or qu'elles soient } tombés  
or } tombées

IMPERFECT.

(*That I might fall*)

Que je tombasse  
que tu tombasses  
qu'il or qu'elle tombât  
que nous tombassions  
que vous tombassiez  
qu'ils or qu'elles tombassent.

PLUPERFECT.

(*That I might have fallen*)

Que je fusse } tombé or  
que tu fusses } tombée  
qu'il or qu'elle fût }  
que nous fussions }  
que vous fussiez } tombés  
qu'ils or qu'elles fussent } or } tombées

## INFINITIVE.

| PRESENT.            | PERFECT.               |
|---------------------|------------------------|
| (To fall)           | (To have fallen)       |
| Tomber              | Être tombé or tombée.  |
| PARTICIPLE PRESENT. | PERFECT.               |
| (Falling)           | (Having fallen)        |
| Tombant             | Êtant tombé or tombée. |

## PAST (VARIABLE).

Tombé, *sem.* tombée (fallen).

## QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. What is a <i>neuter verb</i>?</li> <li>2. Under what other name is it known?</li> <li>3. How are the compound tenses of <i>neuter verbs</i> formed?</li> <li>4. Name the <i>neuter verbs</i> conjugated with the auxiliary <i>être</i>.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>5. Remark on the past participle of <i>neuter verbs</i> conjugated with the auxiliary <i>être</i>.</li> <li>6. Write out the subjunctive present of <i>tomber</i>, negatively; and the conditional past of the same verb interrogatively.</li> </ol> |
|--|---|

## SECTION VII.

## REFLEXIVE VERBS.

155. Whenever the subject at the same time performs and bears the action, as *je me mords, je me flatte* (=I bite myself, I flatter myself), the verb is called **reflexive**, because the action which the subject performs is likewise *reflected* by it.

This verb has likewise been called *pronominal*, on account of its being conjugated with two pronouns.

156. Reflexive verbs are divided into two classes:

1. The verbs reflexive by nature, *s'écrrouler* (=to fall to pieces); *se cabrer* (=to rear); *s'évanouir* (=to faint).
2. The active verbs, as *laver* (=to wash), or *neuter verbs*, as *nuire* (=to injure), employed in a reflexive form: *je me suis lavé* (=I have washed myself); *je me suis nuï* (=I have injured myself).

157. Reflexive verbs are conjugated in all tenses with two pronouns, viz., the *subject je*, and the *complement me*; these pronouns must always belong to the same person, because the action is both performed and suffered by the subject: *je me lave, tu te nuis, etc.*

**158.** The compound tenses of reflexive verbs are formed with the auxiliary *être*.

**159.** When the verb is reflexive by nature, the participle agrees: *ils se sont repentis* (=they have repented);\* when, on the other hand, the verb is only used reflexively, the participle agrees, if the verb is active, and preceded by its direct object: *ils se sont aimés* (=they have loved one another); but it remains invariable, if the verb is neuter: *elles se sont plu* (=they have pleased one another); or if the verb, being active, is followed by its direct object: *ils se sont dit des injures* (=they have insulted each other).

**160.** The reflexive verb is often used in French, when the passive is used in English: *Le sucre se vend quarante centimes la livre* (=sugar is sold at forty centimes a pound); *ce légume se mange cru* (=this vegetable is eaten raw, uncooked).

### Conjugation of the Reflexive Verb SE REPOSER

(= to rest).

Stem, **repos**; termination, or. *se reposer*

#### INDICATIVE.

##### PRESENT.

(I rest)

Je me repose  
tu te reposes  
il or elle se repose  
nous nous reposons  
vous vous reposez  
ils or elles se reposent

##### PAST INDEFINITE.

(I have rested)

|                      |              |          |
|----------------------|--------------|----------|
| Je me suis           | } reposé or  | reposée  |
| tu t'es              |              |          |
| il or elle s'est     | } reposés or | reposées |
| nous nous sommes     |              |          |
| vous vous êtes       | } reposés or | reposées |
| ils or elles se sont |              |          |

##### IMPERFECT.

(I was resting)

Je me reposais  
tu te reposais  
il or elle se reposait  
nous nous reposions  
vous vous reposiez  
ils or elles se reposaient

##### PLUPERFECT.

(I had rested)

|                        |              |          |
|------------------------|--------------|----------|
| Je m'étais             | } reposé or  | reposée  |
| t'étais                |              |          |
| il or elle s'était     | } reposés or | reposées |
| nous nous étions       |              |          |
| vous vous étiez        | } reposés or | reposées |
| ils or elles s'étaient |              |          |

\* The reflexive verb *s'arranger* (=to assume [for oneself]) is an exception to the rule, as the personal pronoun is always the indirect object.

## PAST DEFINITE.

*(I rested)*

Je me reposai  
 tu te reposas  
 il or elle se reposa  
 nous nous reposâmes  
 vous vous reposâtes  
 ils or elles se reposèrent

## FUTURE.

*(I shall rest)*

Je me reposerai  
 tu te reposeras  
 il or elle se reposera  
 nous nous reposerons  
 vous vous reposerez  
 ils or elles se reposeront

## PRESENT.

*(I should rest)*

Je me reposerais  
 tu te reposerais  
 il or elle se reposerait  
 nous nous reposerions  
 vous vous seriez  
 ils or elles se reposeraient

## PRESENT.

*(Rest)*

Repose-toi . . . . .  
 reposons-nous . . . . .  
 reposez-vous . . . . .

## PRESENT.

*(That I may rest)*

Que je me repose  
 que tu te reposes  
 qu'il or qu'elle se repose  
 que nous nous reposions  
 que vous vous reposiez  
 qu'ils or qu'elles se reposent

## PAST ANTERIOR.

*(I had rested)*

Je me fus } reposé or  
 tu te fus } reposée  
 il or elle se fut }  
 nous nous fûmes } reposés or  
 vous vous fûtes } reposées  
 ils or elles se furent }

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

*(I shall have rested)*

Je me serai } reposé or  
 tu te seras } reposée  
 il or elle sera }  
 nous nous serons } reposés or  
 vous vous serez } reposées  
 ils or elles se seront }

## CONDITIONAL.

## ANTERIOR.

*(I should have rested)*

Je me serais } reposé or  
 tu te serais } reposée  
 il or elle se serait }  
 nous nous serions } reposés or  
 vous vous seriez } reposées  
 ils or elles se seraient }

## IMPERATIVE.

## PERFECT.

*(Never used.)*

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PERFECT.

*(That I may have rested)*

Que je me sois } reposé  
 que tu te sois } or  
 qu'il or qu'elle se soit } reposée  
 que nous nous soyons } reposés  
 que vous vous soyez } or  
 qu'ils or qu'elles se } reposées  
 soient }

*continued to*

## IMPERFECT.

(That I might rest)

Que je me reposasse  
 que tu te reposasses  
 qu'il or qu'elle se reposât  
 que nous nous reposassions  
 que vous vous reposassiez  
 qu'ils or qu'elles se reposassent

## PLUPERFECT.

(That I might have rested)

Que je me fusse } reposé  
 que tu te fusses } or  
 qu'il or qu'elle se fût } reposée  
 que nous nous fussions }  
 que vous vous fussiez }  
 qu'ils or qu'elles se }  
 fussent }  
 reposés  
 or  
 reposées

## INFINITIVE.

## PRESENT.

(To rest)

Se reposer

## PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

(Resting).

Se reposant

## PERFECT.

(To have rested)

S'être reposé or reposée.

## PERFECT.

(Having rested)

S'étant reposé or reposée

## PAST (VARIABLE).

Reposé, fem. reposée (rested).

437 The interrogative and negative conjugation of reflexive verbs will be found at page 164.

## QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. Define a reflexive verb.
2. Under what other name is it known?
3. Describe the various classes of reflexive verbs.
4. What auxiliary is used in the compound tenses of reflexive verbs?
5. For what purpose do the French often use the reflexive verb?
6. Write the future anterior, the past indefinite, and the imperfect subjunctive of the verb *se reposer*.

## Exercise 33.

*Indicatif présent.*—Je m'habille. Il ne se repose pas. Vous vous tourmentez en vain. Ils se baignent tous les étés.

*Imparfait.*—Je me proposais de vous écrire. Votre frère ne s'imaginait-il pas que vous aviez tort? Nous ne nous abonnions pas au cabinet de lecture.

*Parfait défini.*—Je ne me fâchai jamais sans motif. Nous enorgueillimes-nous de cet avantage? Vous ne vous dépêchâtes pas.

*Futur.*—T'apercevras-tu de son dessein? Il s'empressera de le fuir. Ne nous acquitterons-nous pas de nos compliments? Elles s'enrhumeront.

*Conditionnel présent.*—Je ne me déciderais jamais aussi imprudemment. Ne s'appliquerait-elle pas au dessin? Votre sœur ne

codé to mbe

subscribing to  
to get ang  
to hasten

se tromperait-elle pas? Ces élèves ne s'habitueraient pas au travail.

*Impératif.*—Repose-toi. Dépêchons-nous. Attendez-vous à recevoir de nos nouvelles? Ne nous fatiguons pas trop.

*Subjonctif présent.*—Il désire que je me porte mieux. Qu'il ne s'amuse pas à mes dépens. Que nous nous précipitions dans le danger. Que ces fleurs ne se flétrissent pas.

*Imparfait.*—J'exigeais que tu te nourrisses avec soin. Que nous nous détournassions du droit chemin. Que vous vous confondissiez en excuses. Qu'ils ne s'enorgueillissent pas d'un avantage insignifiant.

*Infinitif.*—Ne se reposer qu'à de longs intervalles. Ne s'être jamais trompé.

*Participes.*—Ne me fiant qu'à un honnête homme, je ne crois m'être aperçu d'aucune fraude.

*Temps composés.*—Je me suis esquivé. Tu ne t'étais pas rendu à discrétion. Elle ne se fut pas réjouie de cette nouvelle. Vous seriez-vous dégradés dans l'opinion publique? Que je me sois décidé à rester. Que tu ne te fusses pas égaré dans la forêt. Que cette propriété ne se fut pas vendue si cher.

<sup>1</sup> se rendre, <sup>2</sup> raison (*f.*), <sup>3</sup> jouir de, <sup>4</sup> santé (*f.*), <sup>5</sup> s'enorgueillir, <sup>6</sup> léger avantage (*m.*), <sup>7</sup> s'offenser, <sup>8</sup> de poisson, <sup>9</sup> se détromper, <sup>10</sup> s'emparer, <sup>11</sup> en vain, <sup>12</sup> se réunir, <sup>13</sup> se réjouir de, <sup>14</sup> se précipiter, <sup>15</sup> fortune (*f.*), <sup>16</sup> se tromper, <sup>17</sup> s'égarer, <sup>18</sup> se rétracter, <sup>19</sup> s'apercevoir de, <sup>20</sup> s'évanouir, <sup>21</sup> s'esquiver, <sup>22</sup> se recueillir, <sup>23</sup> surprenant, <sup>24</sup> s'acquitter de, <sup>25</sup> avouer, <sup>26</sup> se condamner, <sup>27</sup> se moquer de, <sup>28</sup> se décider, <sup>29</sup> se déshonorer, <sup>30</sup> se vanter.

*Indicative present.*—I yield <sup>1</sup> to his reasons. <sup>2</sup> Dost thou not enjoy <sup>3</sup> better health <sup>4</sup>? We trust an honest man.

*Imperfect.*—He boasted <sup>5</sup> of a trifling advantage. <sup>6</sup> Were you not offended <sup>7</sup>? They feed on fish. <sup>8</sup>

*Perfect definite.*—She undeceived <sup>9</sup> herself. Thou didst not perceive my plan. They took possession <sup>10</sup> of the farm.

*Future.*—I shall subscribe to the circulating library. He will torment himself uselessly. <sup>11</sup> You will not meet <sup>12</sup> here.

*Conditional present.*—Thou wouldst catch cold. We should rejoice at <sup>13</sup> your success. They would rush <sup>14</sup> into (the) danger (*m.*).

*Imperative.*—Make haste. Let us not trust too much to his good luck. <sup>15</sup> Do not make a mistake. <sup>16</sup>

*Subjunctive present.*—That I may not lose myself <sup>17</sup> in the wood. That she may not retract. <sup>18</sup> That we may not wound ourselves.

*Imperfect.*—That thou might perceive <sup>19</sup> the force of this argument. That she might not faint away. <sup>20</sup> That they might steal away. <sup>21</sup>

*Infinitive.*—To collect one's thoughts<sup>22</sup> is often necessary. To have perceived this error is not wonderful.<sup>23</sup>

*Participles.*—Going to Paris, I shall perform<sup>24</sup> your commissions with pleasure. Having made a mistake, he confessed<sup>25</sup> it.

*Compound tenses.*—I have condemned<sup>26</sup> myself. Thou hadst not trusted thy father. We shall not have laughed at<sup>27</sup> him. You would not have made up your mind<sup>28</sup> to remain. That they may have disgraced<sup>29</sup> themselves. That I might have boasted<sup>30</sup> of it.

SECTION VIII.

IMPERSONAL VERBS.

**161.** An **impersonal** verb expresses an action which cannot be ascribed to any special subject or person, such as the verbs *neiger* (= to snow), and *pleuvoir* (= to rain).

**162.** Impersonal verbs are used only in the third person singular, and are preceded by the pronoun **il**, which refers to no subject, and has merely a vague and indefinite sense.

The pronoun *il* of the impersonal verbs is not the same as the pronoun *il* of the active verbs; this latter one stands for a distinct person; the former signifies *cela* (= that), and has only a vague, indeterminate sense.

**163.** Besides the verbs which are naturally impersonal (as *il pleut*, *il neige*), we can employ both active and neuter verbs impersonally: *Il tombe de l'eau* (= water is falling); *il fait beau* (= the weather is fine); *il convient d'obéir* (= it is proper to obey), etc.

These verbs having only one person, are called *unipersonal*.

**Conjugation of the Impersonal Verb NEIGER (= to snow).**

Stem, *neig*; termination *er*.

INDICATIVE.

| PRESENT.                              | PAST INDEFINITE.                         |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| Il neige ( <i>it snows</i> )          | Il a neigé ( <i>it has snowed</i> ).     |
| IMPERFECT.                            | PLUPERFECT.                              |
| Il neigeait ( <i>it was snowing</i> ) | Il avait neigé ( <i>it had snowed</i> ). |



## PAST DEFINITE.

Il neigea (*it snowed*)

## PAST ANTERIOR.

Il eut neigé (*it had snowed*).

## FUTURE.

Il neigera (*it will snow*)

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

Il aura neigé (*it will have snowed*).

## CONDITIONAL.

## PRESENT.

Il neigerait (*it would snow*)

## ANTERIOR.

Il aurait neigé (*it would have snowed*).

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

Qu'il neige (*that it may snow*)

## PERFECT.

Qu'il ait neigé (*that it may have snowed*).

## IMPERFECT.

Qu'il neigeât (*that it might snow*)

## PLUPERFECT.

Qu'il eût neigé (*that it might have snowed*).

## INFINITIVE.

## PRESENT.

Neiger (*to snow*)

## PERFECT.

Avoir neigé (*to have snowed*).

## PARTICIPLE PAST (INVARIABLE).

Neigé (*snowed*).

NOTE the use of *avoir* with the adverb **y** (=there), as an impersonal verb:

*Present Ind.*—Il **y** a (=there is), etc.

## SECTION IX.

## IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.

164. Every verb is called *irregular* which, in the formation of its simple tenses, deviates from the rules we have explained above.

165. A verb may be irregular in one of two ways.  
1. It may lack one or more of the moods, tenses, or persons of regular verbs, and then it is called a *defective verb* (from the Latin *defectivus* = defective, imperfect); or, 2. It may possess all these moods, tenses, or persons, but at the same time vary, so far as their formation is

concerned, from the prescribed rules; it is, then, an *irregular verb* properly so called.

The main characteristic which distinguishes the regular from the irregular verbs, is that in the former the stem remains invariable, whilst the endings *alone* change with the moods, tenses, and persons: *chant-or, chant-ons, chant-eral*; whereas, in the irregular verbs the stem is not uniformly written throughout all the tenses of the conjugation: *ten-ir, je tiens; voul-oir, veuil-lez, je veux; sav-oir, sus, sache*, etc.

4 + H 1. First conjugation: ER.

166. Verbs like *mener* (=to lead), *lever* (=to raise), which have a mute *e* in the last syllable but one, take a grave accent over that *e* whenever it is followed by a mute syllable: *je mène* (=I lead), *il lèvera* (=he will raise). See § 24.

Most verbs, however, in *eler, eter*, like *appeler* (=to call), *jeter* (=to throw), double the **l** or **t**: *j'appelle* (=I call), *il jette* (=he throws). See § 24.

But *acheter* (=to buy), *celer* (=to conceal), *geler* (=to freeze), *modeler* (=to fashion), *peler* (=to peel), etc., take the grave accent, *j'achète* (=I buy), *il pèlera* (=he will peel).

The verbs having a close *é* before the final syllable change it into an open *è* before a consonant followed by an *e* mute, as *céder* (=to yield), *je cède* (=I yield), but those ending in *éger* keep the close *é*, as *protéger* (=to protect), *il me protège* (=he protects me).

167. The verbs ending in **cer** and **ger**, such as *percer* (=to pierce), *tracer* (=to trace), *manger* (=to eat), *loger* (=to lodge), keep their *c* and *g* soft before *a* and *o*, the former by taking a cedilla under the *c*: *nous perçons* (=we pierce), *il traça* (=he traced), the latter by adding an *e* mute after the *g*: *nous mangeons* (=we eat), *nous logeons* (=we lodge).

168. Verbs ending in **yer** change *y* into *i* before *e* mute: *essuyer* (=to wipe), *j'essuie* (=I wipe), *envoyer* (=to send), *ils envoient* (=they send).

For verbs ending in **ayer**, like *payer* (=to pay), *balayer* (=to sweep), the change is optional, but the *y* is more generally retained: *je paye* (=I pay).

4 +

169. The first conjugation has really only two irregular verbs: *aller* (=to go), and *envoyer* (=to send).

**Ailer** (=to go).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Aller, allant, allé, je vais, j'allai.   |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je vais, tu vas, il or elle va, nous allons, vous allez, ils or elles vont.            |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | J'allais, etc., nous allions, etc.   |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | J'allai, tu allas, il or elle alla, nous allâmes, vous allâtes, ils or elles allèrent. |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | J'irai, tu iras, il or elle ira, nous irons, vous irez, ils or elles iront.            |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | J'irais, tu irais, il or elle irait, nous irions, vous iriez, ils or elles iraient.    |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Va, allons, allez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Quo j'aïlle, etc., que nous allions, que vous alliez, qu'ils or qu'elles aillent.      |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Quo j'allasse, etc., que nous allussions, etc.   |
| <i>Impr.</i>         | Aller.   |
| <i>Past.</i>         | Allant, allé.  |

Conjugated with the auxiliary être.

**S'en aller** (=to go away) is conjugated in the same manner:—

*Je m'en vais, tu t'en vas, etc.* The compound tenses, *je m'en suis allé, que je m'en fusse allé, etc.*, ought to be thoroughly acquired by the pupils.

**Envoyer** (=to send).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Envoyer, envoyant, envoyé, j'envoie, j'envoyai. |
| <i>Future.</i>       | J'enverrai; conditional, j'enverrais.           |

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

**2. Second conjugation in IR with Imperfect in ISSAIS.**

170. This conjugation has but one irregular verb, and that only in the past participle. It is the verb **bénir**, the past participle of which can be spelt, according to the meaning, *béni* or *béni*: *béni*, in the case of things consecrated by the church, and *béni* in all other instances: *pain béni* (=consecrated bread), *nation bénie* (=blessed nation).

**Fleurir** (=to blossom, to flourish), has two forms, the one regular, *fleurissais, fleurissant*; the other irre-

gular, *florissais, florissant*;—*florissais, florissant* are the remains of the old verb *florir*.

21. **Hair** (=to hate) takes no diæresis in the indicative present singular, and in the imperative (second person singular): *je hais, tu hais, il hait; hais*.

### 3. Second (direct) conjugation in IR.

171. We have seen (§ 131) that there are two regular conjugations in **ir**: the one (consisting of more than three hundred verbs) which places **iss** between the stem and the termination (*fin-iss-ais*); the other (composed only of about twenty verbs) which merely adds the simple termination *directly* to the stem (*je sent-ais*); we have left this latter one entirely aside in studying the formation of the simple tenses; we shall now study in detail each one of the verbs of which it consists, and we designate this conjugation by the name of *direct* conjugation in **ir**.

172. The verbs constituting the direct conjugation in **ir** are divided into three classes, according to the form of their past definite; *dormir* (=to sleep), *courir* (=to run), and *tenir* (=to hold), have for their respective past definites: *je dorm-**is**, je cour-**us**, je tin-**s***. Accordingly, the first class comprises all the verbs whose past definite is in **is**, the second is characterised by the ending of the same tense in **us**, and the third forms the past definite with the help of the root of the verb: *ten-**ir**, je tin-**s**, ven-**ir**, je vin-**s***.

The irregular verbs of the second conjugation are as follows:—

#### *And* *Je* Acquérrir (=to acquire).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Acquérrir, acquérrant, acquis, j'acquiers, j'acquis.   |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | J'acquiers, tu acquiers, il or elle acquiert, nous acquérons, vous acquérez, ils or elles acquièrent.    |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | J'acquerrais, etc., nous acquerrions, etc.   |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | J'acquis, etc., nous acquimes, etc.  |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | J'acquerrai, tu acquerras, il or elle acquerra, nous acquerrons, vous acquerez, ils or elles acquerront. |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | J'acquerrais, etc., nous acquerrions, etc.   |

|                    |  |
|--------------------|--|
| <i>Imper.</i>      | Acquiers, acquérons, acquérez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i> | Que j'acquière, que tu acquières, qu'il or qu'elle acquière, que nous acquérions, que vous acquériez; qu'ils or qu'elles acquièrent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>     | Que j'acquiesse, etc., que nous acquissions, etc.  |
| <i>Infjn.</i>      | Acquérir.  |
| <i>Part.</i>       | Acquérant, acquis, acquisse.   |

Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.

*Acquérir*, *mourir* and *courir* have for their futuro respectively, *acquerrai*, *mourrai*, *courrai*; as *saillir* has in the futuro *saillera*, side by side with *saillira*, so, instead of *acquerrai*, *mourrai*, *courrai*; then, later on, the *e* mute disappeared, and the contracted forms *acquerrai*, *mourrai*, *courrai*, prevailed. This explains also why the two *r*'s must be pronounced strongly. *cf. end - 1*

### **Bouillir** (= to boil).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Bouillir, bouillant, bouilli, je bous, je bouillis.   |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je bous, tu bous, il or elle bout, nous bouillons, vous bouillez, ils or elles bouillent.   |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je bouillais, etc., nous bouillions, etc.   |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je bouillis, etc., nous bouillimes, etc.  |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je bouillirai, etc., nous bouillirons, etc.   |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je bouillirais, nous bouillirions, etc.   |
| <i>Imp.</i>          | Bous, bouillons, bouillez.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je bouille, que tu bouilles, qu'il or qu'elle bouille, que nous bouillions, que vous bouilliez, qu'ils or qu'elles bouillent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je bouillisse, etc., que nous bouillions, etc.  |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Bouillir.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Bouillant, bouilli, bouillie.   |

Conjugated with the auxiliary verb **avoir**.

N.B.—*Bouillir* is essentially a neuter verb, and *to boil*, used actively, is rendered by the verb *faire* (= to make) and *bouillir*, as: boil these vegetables = *faites bouillir ces légumes*.

### **Courir** (= to run).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Courir, courant, couru, je cours, je cours.   |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je cours, tu cours, il or elle court, nous courons, vous courez, ils or elles courent.        |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je courais, etc., nous courions, etc.   |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je courus, etc., nous courûmes, etc.  |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je courrai, tu courras, il or elle courra, nous courrons, vous courez, ils or elles courront. |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je courrais, etc., nous courrions, etc.   |
| <i>Imp.</i>          | Cours, courons, courez.   |

|                    |  |
|--------------------|--|
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i> | Que je coure, que tu coures, qu'il <i>or</i> qu'elle coure, que nous courions, que vous couriez qu'ils <i>or</i> qu'elles courent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>     | Que je courusse, etc., que nous courussions, etc.  |
| <i>Infjn.</i>      | Courir.  |
| <i>Part.</i>       | Courant, courr;, courue.   |

Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.

Besides *courir*, the old French had also the form *courre*, which still exists in the expression *chasse à courre* (*chasse à courir* = hunting); for the future *courrai*, see above, *acquérir*.

### ~~C~~Couvrir (= to cover). K 18 24

*Prim. Tenses.* Couvrir, couvrant, couvert, je convre, je couvris.

See *offrir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**. + +

### Cueillir (= to pluck).

*Prim. Tenses.* Cueillir, cueillant, cueilli, je cueille, je cueillis.

*Ind. Pres.* Je cueille, tu cueilles, il *or* elle cueille, nous cueillons, vous cueillez, ils *or* elles cueillent.

*Imperf.* Je cueillais, etc., nous cueillions, etc.

*Past Def.* Je cueillis, etc., nous cueillimes, etc.

*Fut.* Je cueillerai, etc., nous cueillerons, etc.

*Cond. Pres.* Je cueillerais, etc., nous cueillerions, etc.

*Imper.* Cueille, cueillons, cueillez.

*Sub. Pres.* Que je cueille, etc., que nous cueillions, etc.

*Imperf.* Que je cueillisse, etc., que nous cueillions, etc.

*Infjn.* Cueillir.

*Part.* Cueillant, cueilli, cueillie.

Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.

For the future *cueillerai*, see *acquérir*. 4X

### ~~D~~Dormir (= to sleep).

*Prim. Tenses.* Dormir, dormant, dormi, je dors, je dormis.

See *mentir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.

### ~~F~~Faillir (= to fail).

45 Several tenses of this verb, such as the *Indicative Present*, *Imperfect*, and *Future*, are seldom used.

*Prim. Tenses.* Faillir, faillant, failli, je faux, je faillis.

*Ind. Pres.* Je faux, tu faux, il *or* elle faut, nous faillons, vous faillez, ils *or* elles faillent.

*Imperf.* Je faillais, tu faillais, il *or* elle faillait, nous faillions - vous failliez, ils *or* elles faillaient.

*Past Def.* Je faillis, etc., nous faillimes, etc.

|                    |  |
|--------------------|--|
| <i>Fut.</i>        | Je faillirai, etc., nous faillirons, etc.        |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i> | Je faillirais, etc., nous faillirions, etc.      |
| <i>Imper.</i>      | Faillie, . . failliez.                           |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i> | Que je faillie, etc., que nous faillions, etc.   |
| <i>Imperf.</i>     | Que je faillisse, etc., que nous faissions, etc. |
| <i>Infin.</i>      | Faillir.   |
| <i>Part.</i>       | Faillant, failli.                                |

Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.

The first three persons of the singular, *je faux, tu faux, il faut* have fallen almost entirely into disuse; the expression is, however, still met with: *le cœur me faut* (*me manque*) = my heart fails me. The *Pres. Part.* also is obsolete.

**Férir** (= to strike) has preserved only the past participle *féru*.

It survives in the expression *sans coup férir* (= without striking a blow): *d'Harcourt prit Turin sans coup férir* (= d'Harcourt took Turin without striking a blow).

**Fuir** (= to flee).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Fuir, fuyant, fui, je fuis, je fuis.   |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je fuis, tu fuis, il or elle fuit, nous fuyons, vous fuyez, ils or elles fuient. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je fuyais, etc., nous fuyions, etc.  |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je fuis, etc., nous fuimes, etc.   |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je fuirai, etc., nous fuirons, etc.  |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je fuirais, etc., nous fuirions, etc.  |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Fuis, fuyons, fuyez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je fuie, etc., que nous fuions, que vous fuyiez, qu'ils or qu'elles fuient.  |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je fuisse, etc., que nous fuissions, etc.                                    |
| <i>Infin.</i>        | Fuir.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Fuyant, fui, fuie.   |

Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.

**Gésir** (*être couché* = to lie down).

This verb is no longer used in the infinitive; the following are the only parts employed: *Il gît, nous gisons, il gisent; il gisait, gisant. Ci-gît* (= here lies) is used in epitaphs.

**Mentir** (= to tell lies).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Mentir, mentant, menti, je mens, je mentis.   |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je mens, tu mens, il or elle ment, nous mentons, vous mentez, ils or elles mentent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je mentais, etc., nous mentions, etc.   |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je mentis, etc., nous mentîmes, etc.  |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je mentirai, etc., nous mentirons, etc.   |

|                    |   |
|--------------------|---|
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i> | Je mentirais, etc., nous mentirions, etc.         |
| <i>Imper.</i>      | Mens, mentons, mentez.                            |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i> | Que je mente, etc., que nous mentionnions, etc.   |
| <i>Imperf.</i>     | Que je mentisse, etc., que nous mentissions, etc. |
| <i>Infjn.</i>      | Mentir.   |
| <i>Part.</i>       | Mentant, menti.                                   |

Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.

### **Mourir** (= to die).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Mourir, mourant, mort, je meurs, je mourus.  |
| <i>Indic. Pres.</i>  | Je meurs, tu meurs, il or elle meurt, nous mourons, vous mourez, ils or elles meurent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je mourais, etc., nous mourions, etc.  |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je mourus, etc., nous mourûmes, etc.   |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | + Je mourrai, etc., nous mourrons, etc.  |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | + Je mourrais, etc., nous mourrions, etc.  |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Meurs, mourons, mourez.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | + Que je meure, etc., que nous mourions, que vous mouriez, qu'ils meurent.             |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je mourusse, etc., que nous mourussions, etc.                                      |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Mourir.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Mourant, mort, morte.  |

Conjugated with the auxiliary **être**.

For the future mourrai, see above *acquérir*.

### + **Offrir** (= to offer).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Offrir, offrant, offert, j'offre, j'offris.  |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | J'offre, tu offres, il or elle offre, nous offrons, vous offrez, ils or elles offrent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | J'offrais, etc., nous offrions, etc.   |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | J'offris, etc., nous offrimes, etc.  |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | J'offrirai, etc., nous offrirons, etc.   |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | J'offrirais, etc., nous offririons, etc.   |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Offre, offrons, offrez.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que j'offre, etc., que nous offrions, etc.   |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que j'offrisse, etc., que nous offrissions, etc.                                       |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Offrir.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Offrant, offert, offerte.  |

~~Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.~~ + X + | - | - |

### **Oùir** (= to hear).

This verb is used only in the *Inf. Pres.*, oùir; the *Part. Past.*, ouï; the *Past Def.*, j'ouïs, tu ouïs, etc.; the *Imperf. Subj.* que j'ouïsse, que tu ouïsses, etc. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.

The past participle subsists in law language: *ouïe la lecture de l'arrêt* (la lecture de l'arrêt entendue) = the reading of the sentence being heard.



**Ouvrir** (= to open).*Prim. Tenses.* Ouvrir, ouvrant, ouvert, j'ouvre, j'ouvrirai.See *ouvrir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.+ **Partir** (= to set out).*Prim. Tenses.* Partir, partant, parti, je pars, je partirai.See *mentir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary ~~être~~ ++ **Saillir** (= to jump, to gush) is conjugated like *saillir*, but when it means to *jut out* it has:—*Prim. Tenses.* Saillir, saillant, sailli, il saille, and the future is saillera.See *tressaillir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.+ **Sentir** (= to feel).*Prim. Tenses.* Sentir, sentant, senti, je sens, je sentirai.See *mentir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.+ **Servir** (= to serve).*Prim. Tenses.* Servir, servant, servi, je sers, je servirai.See *mentir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.+ **Sortir** (= to go out).*Prim. Tenses.* Sortir, sortant, sorti, je sors, je sortirai.See *mentir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **être**.+ **Souffrir** (= to suffer).*Prim. Tenses.* Souffrir, souffrant, souffert, je souffre, je souffrirai.See *ouvrir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.+ **Tenir** (= to hold).*Prim. Tenses.* Tenir, tenant, tenu, je tiens, je tiens.See *venir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.+ **Tressaillir** (= to start).*Prim. Tenses.* Tressaillir, tressaillant, tressailli, je tressaille, je tressaillirai.*Ind. Pres.* Je tressaille, tu tressailles, il tressaille, nous tressaillons, vous tressailliez, ils tressaillent.*Imperf.* Je tressaillais, etc., nous tressaillions, etc.*Past Def.* Je tressaillis, etc., nous tressaillîmes, etc.*Plup.* Je tressaillirai, etc., nous tressaillirons, etc.*Cond. Pres.* Je tressaillirais, etc., nous tressaillirions, etc.*Imper.* Tressaille, tressaillons, tressailliez.

|                    |  |
|--------------------|--|
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i> | Que je tressaille, etc., que nous tressaillions, etc.    |
| <i>Imperf.</i>     | Que je tressaillisse, etc., que nous tressaillions, etc. |
| <i>Inf.</i>        | Tressaillir.   |
| <i>Part.</i>       | Tressaillant, tressailli.                                |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

### Venir (= to come).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Vénir, venant, venu, je viens, je vins.   |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je viens, tu viens, il <i>or</i> elle vient, nous venons, vous venez, ils <i>or</i> elles viennent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je venais, etc., nous venions, etc.   |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je vins, etc., nous vîmes, etc.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Je viendrais, etc., nous viendrions, etc.   |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je viendrais, etc., nous viendrions, etc.   |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Viens, venons, venez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je vienne, etc., que nous venions, que vous veniez, qu'ils <i>or</i> qu'elles viennent.         |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je vinsse, etc., que nous viussions, etc.   |
| <i>Inf.</i>          | Venir.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Venant, venu, venue.  |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary être.*

### Vêtir (= to clothe).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Vêtant, vêtu, je vêts, je vêtis.   |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je vêts, tu vêts, il <i>or</i> elle vêt, nous vêtions, vous vêtez, ils <i>or</i> elles vêtent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je vêtis, etc., nous vêtions, etc.   |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je vêtis, etc., nous vêtîmes, etc.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Je vêtirais, etc., nous vêtirions, etc.  |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je vêtirais, etc., nous vêtirions, etc.  |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Vêts, vêtions, vêtez.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je vête, etc., que nous vêtions, etc.  |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je vêtisse, etc., que nous vêtissions, etc.  |
| <i>Inf.</i>          | Vêtir.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Vêtant, vêtu, vêtue.   |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

## 4. Third Conjugation: OIR.

173. The irregular verbs in *oir* are subdivided into two classes:—

1. The first forms its past definite in *us*, and its participle in *u*: *valoir* (= to be worth), *valus*, *va/u*.

2. The second class comprises the two verbs *asseoir* (= to sit), and *voir* (= to see), forming their past definite

in **is** (*assis, vis*), but differing from each other in the past participle (*assis, vu*).

**174.** The irregular verbs of the third conjugation are the following :—

**Asseoir** (=to seat, to place, to sit).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Asseoir, asseyant, assis, j'assieds, j'assis.   |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | J'assieds, tu assieds, il assied, nous asseyons, vous asseyez, ils asseyent.                          |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | J'asseyais, etc., nous asseyions, etc.  |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | J'assis, etc., nous assimes, etc.   |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | J'assiérai, etc., nous assiérons, etc.; the French also say: j'asseyerai, etc., nous asseyerons, etc. |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | J'assiérais, etc., nous assiérons, etc.; also: j'asseyerais, etc., nous asseyerions, etc.             |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Assieds, asseyons, asseyez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que j'asseye, etc., que nous asseyions, que vous asseyiez, qu'ils asseyent.                           |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que j'assisse, etc., que nous assissions, etc.  |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Asseoir.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Asseyant, assis, assise.  |

The verb *asseoir* is also conjugated as follows :—

|                   |  |
|-------------------|--|
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i> | J'assois, tu assois, il assoit, nous assoyons, vous assoyez, ils assoient. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>    | J'assoynais, etc.  |

But this manner is not used in written language.

The verb *surseoir* (=to postpone) follows this second form.

Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**; but it takes the auxiliary **être** when used as a reflexive verb: *s'asseoir* (=to sit down).

**Choir** (*tomber* =to fall).

Employed only in the infinitive, and in a limited number of instances.

In the old French it was conjugated throughout (*chois, chéais, cherrai, chut, chéant, chu*). Even as late as the seventeenth century we find the future *cherrai*: *Tirez la chevillotte, et la bobinette cherra* (=pull the peg and the bobbin will fall). PERRAULT.

The past participle *chu* (=tombé) has given the feminine substantive *chute*, just as the past participles *entrée, revue, battue* have given, respectively, the substantives: *une entrée, une revue, une battue*.

**Déchoir** (=to decay, fall).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Déchoir, déchu, je déchois, je déchus.  |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je déchois, tu déchois, il déchoit, nous déchoyons, vous déchoyez, ils déchoient. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je déchoyais, etc., nous déchoyions, etc.   |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je déchus, etc., nous déchûmes, etc.  |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je décherrai, etc., nous décherrons, etc.   |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je décherrais, etc., nous décherrions, etc.                                       |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Déchois, déchoyons, déchoyez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je déchois, etc., que nous déchoyions, que vous déchoyiez, qu'ils déchoient.  |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je déchusse, etc., que nous déchussions, etc.                                 |
| <i>Infm.</i>         | Déchoir.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | (no <i>Pres. Part.</i> ) déchu, déchue.   |

Conjugated with **avoir** when it expresses an action, and with **être** when it denotes a state.

**Échoir** (=to fall due).

*Prim. Tenses* : échoir, échéant, échu, il échoit, j'échus.

Conjugated as *déchoir*.—Used only in the *Part. Pres.*, échéant; the *Part. Past.*, échu; the *Indic. Pres.*, third person singular, il échoit (pronounced and often written *échet*); the *Past Def.*, j'échus, etc.; the *Fut.*, j'écherrai, etc.; the *Cond. Pres.*, j'écherrais, etc.; the *Imperf. Subj.*, que j'échusse, etc.

See *déchoir*. Conjugated with **avoir** or **être**.

From the *Pres. Part.* *échéant* comes the feminine substantive *échéance*, just as *vengeant*, *surveillant* have formed *vengeance*, *surveillance*. (See § 44.)

**Falloir** (=to be necessary).

|                      |                                     |
|----------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Falloir, fallu, il faut, il fallut. |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Il faut.                            |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Il fallait.                         |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Il fallut.                          |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Il faudra.                          |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Il faudrait.                        |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | (None.)                             |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Qu'il faille.                       |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Qu'il fallût.                       |
| <i>Infm.</i>         | Falloir.                            |
| <i>Part.</i>         | (no <i>Pres. Part.</i> ) fallu.     |

Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**

**Mouvoir** (= to move).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Mouvoir, mouvant, mû, je meus, je mus.   |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je meus, tu meus, il meut, nous mouvons, vous mouvez, ils meuvent.                             |
| <i>Impef.</i>        | Je mouvais, etc., nous mouvions, etc.  |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je mus, etc., nous mûmes, etc.   |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je mouvrai, etc., nous mouvrons, etc.  |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je mouvrais, etc., nous mouvriions, etc.   |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Meus, mouvons, mouvez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je meuvo, que tu meuves, qu'il meuve, que nous mouvions, que vous mouviez, qu'ils meuvent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je musse, etc., que nous mussions, etc.  |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Mouvoir.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Mouvant, mû, mue.  |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Pleuvoir** (= to rain).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Pleuvoir, pleuvant, plu, il pleut, il plut. |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Il pleut.                                   |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Il pleuvait.                                |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Il plut.                                    |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Il pleuvra.                                 |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Il pleuvrait.                               |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Qu'il pleuvs.                               |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Qu'il plût.                                 |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Pleuvoir.                                   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Pleuvant, plu.                              |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Pouvoir** (= to be able).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Pouvoir, pouvant, pu, je peux or je puis, je pus.                              |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je peux or je puis*, tu peux, il peut, nous pouvons, vous pouvez, ils peuvent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je pouvais, etc., nous pouvions, etc.  |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je pus, etc., nous pûmes, etc.   |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je pourrai, etc., nous pourrons, etc. †  |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je pourrais, etc., nous pourrions, etc. †                                      |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | (None).  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je puisse, etc., que nous puissions, etc.                                  |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je pusse, etc., que nous pussions, etc.                                    |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Pouvoir.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Pouvant, pu.   |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

\**Puis* is the only form used in the interrogative conjugation (for the first person), *Puis-je?* (= can I?)

† The two *r*'s sounded only as one, whilst in *acquerrai*, etc., both are sounded strongly.

**Savoir** (=to know).

*Prim. Tenses.* Savoir, sachant, su, je suis, je sus.

*Ind. Pres.* Je sais, tu sais, il sait, nous savons, vous savez, ils savent.

*Imperf.* Je savais, etc., nous savions, etc.

*Past Def.* Je sus, etc., nous sûmes, etc.

*Fut.* Je saurai, etc., nous saurons, etc.

*Cond. Pres.* Je saurais, etc., nous saurions, etc.

*Imper.* Sache, sachez, sachez.

*Subj. Pres.* Que je sache, etc., que nous sachions, etc.

*Imperf.* Que je susse, etc., que nous sussions, etc.

*Infm.* Savoir.

*Part.* Sachant, su, sue.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

In the Old French, *savoir* was *saver*, from the Latin *sapere*. This form *saver* gave the future *saver-ai*, which, contracted later into *savrai* (as *recevoir* into *recevrai*, *devoir* into *devrai*, etc.), became in the fourteenth century *saurai*, as *habere* has given *aver-ai*, then *aurai*, and finally *aurai*.

**Seoir.**

In the sense of to be seated (=être assis) this verb is obsolete. It is sometimes used in the present participle, *séant*, and the past participle, *sis, siss*. When meaning to be becoming (=être convenable) it is still used in certain tenses, and always in the third person singular or plural: *il sied, ils siéent, il seyait, il siéra*.

**Valoir** (=to be worth).

*Prim. Tenses.* Valoir, valant, valu, je vauz, je valus.

*Ind. Pres.* Je vauz, tu vauz, il vaut, nous valons, vous valez, ils valent.

*Imperf.* Je valais, etc., nous valions, etc.

*Past Def.* Je valus, etc., nous valûmes, etc.

*Fut.* Je vaudrai, etc., nous vaudrons, etc.

*Cond. Pres.* Je vaudrais, nous vaudrions, etc.

*Imper.* Vauz, valons, valez.

*Subj. Pres.* Que je vaille, que tu vailles, qu'il vaille, que nous valions, que vous valiez, qu'ils vaillent.

*Imperf.* Que je valusse, etc., que nous valussions, etc.

*Infm.* Valoir.

*Part.* Valant, valu.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

The compounds of this verb are conjugated in the same manner, with the exception of *prévaloir* (=to prevail), whose *Subj. Pres.* is: *que je prévaille, etc., que nous prévalions, etc.* X

**Voir** (=to see).

*Prim. Tenses.* Voir, voyant, vu, je vois, je vis.

*Ind. Pres.* Je vois, tu vois, il voit, nous voyons, vous voyez, ils voient.

*Imperf.* Je voyais, etc., nous voyions, etc.

*Past Def.* Je vis, etc., nous vîmes, etc.

*Fut.* Je verrai, etc., nous verrons,\* etc.

*Cond. Pres.* Je verrais, etc., nous verrions,\* etc.

*Imper.* Vois, voyons, voyez.

*Subj. Pres.* Que je voie, etc., que nous voyions, etc.

*Imperf.* Que je visse, etc., que nous vissions, etc.

*Infjn.* Voir.

*Part.* Voyant, vu, vus.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

N.B.—*Pouvoir* (=to provide), and *prévoir* (=to foresee), make in the *Fut.* and *Cond.*: *je pourvois, je pourvois, je prévois, je prévois*. Besides, the *Past Def.* and *Imperf. Subj.* of *pouvoir* are *je pourvus, que je pourvusse*.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Vouloir** (=to will, to be willing).

*Prim. Tenses.* Vouloir, voulant, voulu, je veux, je voulais.

*Ind. Pres.* Je veux, tu veux, il veut, nous voulons, vous voulez, ils veulent.

*Imperf.* Je voulais, etc., nous voulions, etc.

*Past Def.* Je voulus, etc., nous voulûmes, etc.

*Fut.* Je voudrai, etc., nous voudrons, etc.

*Cond. Pres.* Je voudrais, etc., nous voudrions, etc.

*Imper.* Veuille, veuillons, veuillez. (The *Imper. proper*, *veux, voulons, voulez*, is seldom used).

*Subj. Pres.* Que je veuille, etc., que nous voulions, que vous vouliez, qu'ils veuillent.

*Imperf.* Que je voulusse, etc., que nous voulussions, etc.

*Infjn.* Vouloir.

*Part.* Voulant, voulu, voulue.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**5. Fourth Conjugation: RE.**

**175.** The irregular verbs in **re** may be subdivided into two classes according to the formation of the past definite: 1. Verbs with the past definite in **is**: *craindre* (=to fear), *craignis*; 2. Verbs with the past definite in **us**: *connaître* (=to know), *connus*.

\* See Note on *pouvoir*.

**176.** The irregular verbs in **re** are the following:—

**Absoudre** (= to absolve).

*Prim. Tenses.* Absoudre, absolvant, absous (*fem.* absoute), j'absous ;  
no *Past Definite*. See *résoudre*.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Boire** (= to drink).

*Prim. Tenses.* Boire, buvant, bu, je bois, je bus.

*Ind. Pres.* Je bois, tu bois, il boit, nous buvons, vous buvez,  
ils boivent.

*Imperf.* Je buvais, etc., nous buvions, etc.

*Past Def.* Je bus, etc., nous bûmes, etc.

*Fut.* Je boirai, etc., nous boirons, etc.

*Cond. Pres.* Je boirais, etc., nous boirions, etc.

*Imper.* Bois, buvons, buvez.

*Subj. Pres.* Que je boive, etc., que nous buvions, que vous buviez,  
qu'ils boivent.

*Imperf.* Que je busse, etc., que nous bussions, etc.

*Infjn.* Boire.

*Pa.t.* Buvant, bu, bue.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Braire** (= to bray).

This verb, according to the *Académie*, is used only in the *Infinitive*, and in the third person of the *Present Indicative*, *Future*, and *Conditional* : braire, il brait, ils braient, il braira, ils brairont, il brairait, ils brairaient.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

*Braire*, in the old language, had the general sense of *crier* (= to shout), and was applied to men as well as to animals ; it is only at a comparatively recent period that the meaning was limited to the noise made by an ass.

**Bruire** (= to roar, rattle, resound).

This verb has only the following forms : bruire, il bruit, il bruyait, ils bruyaient. *Bruyant* now is rather an adjective than a present participle.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Clore** (= to close).

Used only in the *Past Participle*, clos, close ; the three persons singular of the *Ind. Pres.*, je clos, tu clos, il clôt ; the *Fut.*, je clorai, tu cloras, etc. ; the *Cond. Pres.*, je clorais, etc. ; the *Imper.* singular, clos ; *Subj. Pres.*, que je close ; and all compound tenses.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*



**Conclure** (= to conclude).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Conclure, concluant, conclu, je conclus, je conclus.                              |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je conclus, tu conclus, il conclut, nous concluons, vous concluez, ils concluent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je concluais, etc., nous concluions, etc.   |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je conclus, etc., nous concluâmes, etc.   |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je conclurai, etc., nous conclurons, etc.   |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je conclurais, etc., nous conclurions, etc.                                       |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Conclus, concluons, concluez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je conclue, etc., que nous concluions, que vous concluíez, qu'ils concluent.  |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je conclusse, etc., que nous concluissions, etc.                              |
| <i>Infin.</i>        | Conclure.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Concluant, conclu, conclue.   |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Conduire** (= to conduct).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Conduire, conduisant, conduit, je conduis, je conduisis. |
|----------------------|--|

*See nuire. Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Confire** (= to pickle).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Confire, confisant, confit, je confis, je confis.                              |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je confis, tu confis, il confit, nous confisons, vous confisez, ils confisent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je confisais, etc., nous confisions, etc.                                      |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je confis, etc., nous confimes, etc.   |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je confirai, etc., nous confirons, etc.  |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je confirais, etc., nous confirions, etc.                                      |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Confis, confisons, confisez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je confise, etc., que nous confisions, etc.                                |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | (None.)  |
| <i>Infin.</i>        | Confire.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Confisant, confit, confite.  |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Connaitre** (= to know).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Connaitre, connaissant, connu, je connais, je connus.                                   |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je connais, tu connais, il connaît, nous connaissons, vous connaissez, ils connaissent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je connaissais, etc., nous connaissions, etc.   |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je connus, etc., nous connûmes, etc.  |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je connaîtrai, etc., nous connaîtrons, etc.   |

|                    |   |
|--------------------|---|
| <i>Cond. Perf.</i> | Je connaîtrais, etc., nous connaîtrions, etc.       |
| <i>Imper.</i>      | Connais, connaissons, connaissez.                   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i> | Que je connaisse, etc., que nous connaissions, etc. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>     | Que je connusse, etc., que nous connussons, etc.    |
| <i>Infîn.</i>      | Connaître.  |
| <i>Part.</i>       | Connaissant, connu, connue.                         |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

N.B.—Whenever the vowel **i** is followed by **t** in this verb, it takes the circumflex accent: *connait, connaîtraî*, etc.

### **Coudre** (=to sew).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Coudre, cousant, cousu, je couds, je consis.                         |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je couds, tu couds, il coud, nous cousons, vous cousez, ils cousent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je cousais, etc., nous cousions, etc.                                |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je cousis, etc., nous cousimes, etc.                                 |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je coudrai, etc., nous coudrons, etc.                                |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je coudrais, etc., nous coudrions, etc.                              |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Couds, cousons, cousez.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je cose, etc., que nous cousions, etc.                           |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je coussisse, etc., que nous coussissions, etc.                  |
| <i>Infîn.</i>        | Coudre.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Cousant, cousu, cousue.  |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

### **Craindre** (=to fear).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Craindre, craignant, craint, je crains, je craignis.                             |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je crains, tu crains, il craint, nous craignons, vous craignez, ils craignent.   |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je craignais, etc., nous craignions, etc.  |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je craignis, etc., nous craignimes, etc.   |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je craindrai, etc., nous craindrons, etc.  |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je craindrais, etc., nous craindrions, etc.                                      |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Crains, craignons, craignez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je craigne, etc., que nous craignions, que vous craigniez, qu'ils craignent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je craignisse, etc., que nous craignissions, etc.                            |
| <i>Infîn.</i>        | Craindre.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Craignant, craint, crainte.  |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

### **Croire** (=to believe).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Croire, croyant, cru, je crois, je crus.                              |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je crois, tu crois, il croit, nous croyons, vous croyez, ils croient. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je croyais, etc. nous croyions, etc.                                  |

|                    |  |
|--------------------|--|
| <i>Past. Def.</i>  | Je crus, etc., nous crûmes, etc.   |
| <i>Fut.</i>        | Je croirai, etc., nous croirons, etc.                                    |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i> | Je croirais, etc., nous croirions, etc.                                  |
| <i>Imper.</i>      | Crois, croyons, croyez.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i> | Que je croie, etc., que nous croyions, que vous croyiez, qu'ils croient. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>     | Que je crusse, etc., que nous crussions, etc.                            |
| <i>Infjn.</i>      | Croire.  |
| <i>Part.</i>       | Croyant, cru, crue.  |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

### **Croître** (= to grow).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Croître, croissant, crû, je crois, je crus.                                |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je crois, tu crois, il croit, nous croissons, vous croissez, il croissent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je croissais, etc., nous croissions, etc.                                  |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je crûs, etc., nous crûmes, etc.   |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je croîtrai, etc., nous croîtrons, etc.                                    |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je croitrais, etc., nous croitrions, etc.                                  |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Crois, croissons, croissez.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je croisse, etc., que nous croissions, etc.                            |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je crusse, etc., que nous crussions, etc.                              |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Croître.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Croissant, crû, crue.  |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

N.B.—See *connaître*.

### **Dire** (= to say).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Dire, disant, dit, je dis, je dis.                           |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je dis, tu dis, il dit, nous disons, vous dites, ils disent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je disais, etc., nous disions, etc.                          |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je dis, etc., nous dîmes, etc.                               |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je dirai, etc., nous dirons, etc.                            |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je dirais, etc., nous dirions, etc.                          |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Dis, disons, dites.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je dise, etc., que nous disions, etc.                    |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je disse, etc., que nous dissions, etc.                  |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Dire.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Disant, dit, dite.   |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

N.B.—All the compounds of *dire* make *disez* in the second person plural of the *Pres. Indic.*, with the exception of *redire* (= to repeat), and *maudire* (= to curse), which make *redites*, *maudissez*.

**Éclore** (= to be hatched, to open, to dawn).—  
Limited to the following forms :—

|                    |                                |
|--------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>  | Il éclôt, ils éclosent.        |
| <i>Fut.</i>        | Il éclôra, ils éclôront.       |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i> | Il éclôrait, ils éclôraient.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i> | Qu'il éclose, qu'ils éclosent. |
| <i>Infjn.</i>      | Éclore.                        |
| <i>Part. Past.</i> | Éclosant, éclos, éclosé.       |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary être.*

**Écrire** (= to write).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Écrire, écrivant, écrit, j'écris, j'écrivis.                            |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | J'écris, tu écris, il écrit, nous écrivons, vous écrivez, ils écrivent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | J'écrivais, etc., nous écrivions, etc.                                  |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | J'écrivis, etc., nous écrivîmes, etc.                                   |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | J'écrirai, etc., nous écrirons, etc.                                    |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | J'écrirais, etc., nous écririons, etc.                                  |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Écris, écrivons, écrivez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que j'écrive, etc., que nous écrivions, etc.                            |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que j'écrivisse, etc., que nous écrivissions, etc.                      |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Écrire.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Écrivant, écrit, écrite.  |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Faire** (= to make or to do).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Faire, faisant, fait, je fais, je fis.                          |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je fais, tu fais, il fait, nous faisons, vous faites, ils font. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je faisais, etc., nous faisions, etc.                           |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je fis, etc., nous fîmes, etc.                                  |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je ferai, etc., nous ferons, etc.                               |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je ferais, etc., nous ferions, etc.                             |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Fais, faisons, faites.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je fasse, etc., que nous fassions, etc.                     |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je fisse, etc., que nous fissions, etc.                     |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Faire.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Faisant, fait, faite.   |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Frire** (= to fry).

This verb, besides the *Infjn. Pres.*, has also the three persons singular of the *Ind. Pres.*, je fris, tu frits, il frit; the *Fut.*, je

frirai, etc.; the *Cond. Pres.*, je frirais, etc.; the second person singular of the *Imper.*, fris; the *Part. Past.*, frit, frite.

The tenses of this verb are more generally made up by placing the verb *faire* before the infinitive *frir*: nous faisons frir, vous faites frir.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

### Joindre (= to join).

*Prim. Tenses.* Joindre, joignant, joint, je joins, je joignis.

See *craindre*. *Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

### Lire (= to read).

*Prim. Tenses.* Lire, lisant, lu, je lis, je lus.

*Ind. Pres.* Je lis, tu lis, il lit, nous lisons, vous lisez, ils lisent.

*Imperf.* Je lisais, etc., nous lisions, etc.

*Past Def.* Je lus, etc., nous lûmes, etc.

*Fut.* Je lirai, etc., nous lirons, etc.

*Cond. Pres.* Je lirais, etc., nous lirions, etc.

*Imper.* Lis, lisons, lisez.

*Subj. Pres.* Que je lise, etc., que nous lisions, etc.

*Imperf.* Que je lusse, etc., que nous lussions, etc.

*Infjn.* Lire.

*Part.* Lisant, lu, lue.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

### Luire (= to shine).

*Prim. Tenses.* Luire, luisant, lui, je luis, je luisis.

*Ind. Pres.* Je luis, tu luis, il luit, nous luisons, vous luezes, ils luisent.

*Imperf.* Je luisais, etc., nous luisions, etc.

*Past Def.* Je luisis, etc., nous luisimes, etc.\*

*Fut.* Je luirai, etc., nous luirons, etc.

*Cond. Pres.* Je luirais, etc., nous luirions, etc.

*Imper.* Lue, luisons, luezes.

*Subj. Pres.* Que je lue, etc., que nous luisions, etc.

*Imperf.* Que je luisisse, etc., que nous luisissions etc.

*Infjn.* Luire.

*Part.* Luisant, lui.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

\* This tense, which the *Académie* does not give, is very seldom used. It is to be found in Bossuet.

**Mettre** (= to place, to put).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Mettre, mettant, mis, je mets, je mis.                            |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je mets, tu mets, il met, nous mettons, vous mettez, ils mettent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je mettais, etc., nous mettions, etc.                             |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je mis, etc., nous mîmes, etc.                                    |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je mettrai, etc., nous mettrons, etc.                             |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je mettrais, etc., nous mettrions, etc.                           |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Mets, mettons, mettez.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je mette, etc., que nous mettions, etc.                       |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je misse, etc., que nous missions, etc.                       |
| <i>Injin.</i>        | Mette.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Mettant, mis, miso.   |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Moudre** (= to grind).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Moudre, moulant, moulu, je mouds, je moulus.                         |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je mouds, tu mouds, il moud, nous moulons, vous moulez, ils moulent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je moulais, etc., nous moulions, etc.                                |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je moulus, etc., nous moulûmes, etc.                                 |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je moudrai, etc., nous moudrons, etc.                                |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je moudrais, etc., nous moudrions, etc.                              |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Mouds, moulons, moulez.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je moule, etc., que nous moulions, etc.                          |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je moulusse, etc., que nous moulussions, etc.                    |
| <i>Injin.</i>        | Moudre.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Moulant, moulu, moulue.  |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Naître** (= to be born).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Naître, naissant, né, je nais, je naquis.                             |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je nais, tu nais, il naît, nous naissons, vous naissez, ils naissent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je naisais, etc., nous naissons, etc.                                 |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je naquis, etc., nous naquimes, etc.                                  |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je naîtrai, etc., nous naîtrons, etc.                                 |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je naîtrais, etc., nous naîtrions, etc.                               |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Nais, naissons, naissez.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je naisse, etc., que nous naissons, etc.                          |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je naquiesse, etc., que nous naquissions, etc.                    |
| <i>Injin.</i>        | Naître.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Naissant, né, née.  |

See *connaître*. *Conjugated with the auxiliary être.*

**Nuire** (= to injure, to be hurtful).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Nuire, nuisant, nuî, je nuis, je nuisis.                           |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je nuis, tu nuis, il nuit, nous nuisons, vous nuisez, ils nuisent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je nuisais, etc., nous nuisions, etc.                              |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je nuisis, etc., nous nuisîmes, etc.                               |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je nuirai, etc., nous nuirons, etc.                                |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je nuirais, etc., nous nuirions, etc.                              |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Nuis, nuisons, nuisez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je nuise, etc., que nous nuisions, etc.                        |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je nuisisse, etc., que nous nuisissions, etc.                  |
| <i>Infin.</i>        | Nuire.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Nuisant, nuî.  |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Oindre** (= to anoint).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Oindre, oignant, oint, j'oins, j'oignis.        |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | J'oins, etc., nous oignons, etc.                |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | J'oignais, etc., nous oignions, etc.            |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | J'oignis, etc., nous oignîmes, etc.             |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | J'oindrai, etc., nous oindrons, etc.            |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | J'oindrais, etc., nous oindrions, etc.          |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Oins, oignons, oignez.                          |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que j'oigne, etc., que nous oignons, etc.       |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que j'oiguise, etc., que nous oiguissions, etc. |
| <i>Infin.</i>        | Oindre.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Oint, ointe.                                    |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

This verb is seldom used, except in the *Pres. Infin.*, the *Participles*, and the *Future*.

**Paitre** (= to graze).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Paitre, paissant, —, je pais, —.                                       |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je pais, tu pais, il pait, nous paissions, vous paissez, ils paissent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je paissais, etc., nous paissions, etc.                                |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je paîtrai, etc., nous paîtrons, etc.                                  |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je paîtrais, etc., nous paîtrions, etc.                                |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Pais, paissions, paissez.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je paisse, etc., que nous paissions, etc.                          |
| <i>Infin.</i>        | Paitre.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Paissant.  |

This verb has neither *Past Def.*, *Imperf. Subjunctive*, nor *Past Participle*.

**Repaitre** is conjugated like *paître*; but it has both a *Past Def.*: je repus, and a *Past Participle*: repu.

The simple participle **pu** is still used as a term of falconry: un faucon qui a **pu** (=a hawk which has been fed).

**Paraître** (=to appear).

*Prim. Tenses.* Paraître, paraissant, paru, je paraissais, je parus.  
See *connaître*.

**Peindre** (=to paint).

*Prim. Tenses.* Peindre, peignant, peint, je peignais, je peignis.  
See *craindre*.

**Plaire** (=to please).

*Prim. Tenses.* Plaire, plaisant, plu, je plais, je plus.  
*Ind. Pres.* Je plais, tu plais, il plait, nous plaisons, vous plaisez, ils plaisent.  
*Imperf.* Je plaisais, etc., nous plaisions, etc.  
*Past Def.* Je plus, etc., nous plûmes, etc.  
*Fut.* Je pluirai, etc., nous pluirons, etc.  
*Cond. Pres.* Je plairais, etc., nous plairions, etc.  
*Imper.* Plais, plaisons, plaisez.  
*Subj. Pres.* Que je plaise, etc., que nous plaisions, etc.  
*Imperf.* Que je plussé, etc., que nous plussions, etc.  
*Infin.* Plaire.  
*Part.* Plaisant, plu.

Conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir*.

**Prendre** (=to take).

*Prim. Tenses.* Prendre, prenant, pris, je prends, je pris.  
*Ind. Pres.* Je prends, tu prends, il prend, nous prenons, vous prenez, ils prennent.  
*Imperf.* Je prenais, etc., nous prenions, etc.  
*Past Def.* Je pris, etc., nous primes, etc.  
*Fut.* Je prendrai, etc., nous prendrons, etc.  
*Cond. Pres.* Je prendrais, etc., nous prendrions, etc.  
*Imper.* Prends, prenons, prenez.  
*Subj. Pres.* Que je prenne, etc., que nous prenions, que vous preniez, qu'ils prennent.  
*Imperf.* Que je prisse, etc., que nous prissions, etc.  
*Infin.* Prendre.  
*Part.* Prenant, pris, prise.

Conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir*.



**Résoudre** (=to resolve).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Résoudre, résolvant, résolu, je résous, je résclus.   |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je résous, tu résous, il résout, nous résolvons, vous résolvez, ils résolvent.                                      |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je résolvais, etc., nous résolvions, etc.   |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je résolus, etc., nous résolûmes, etc.  |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je résoudrai, etc., nous résoudrons, etc.   |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je résoudrais, etc., nous résoudrions, etc.   |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Résous, résolvons, résolvez.  |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je résolve, etc., que nous résolvions, etc.   |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je résolusse, etc., que nous résolussions, etc.   |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Résoudre.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Résolvant, résolu, résolue; or résous; we still say, <i>brouillard résous en pluie</i> (=a fog resolved into rain). |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Rire** (=to laugh).

|                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Rire, riant, ri, je ris, je ris   |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je ris, tu ris, il rit, nous rions, vous riez, ils rient.                         |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je riais, etc., nous riions, etc.   |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je ris, etc., nous rimes, etc.  |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je rirai, etc., nous rirons, etc.   |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je rirais, etc., nous ririons, etc.   |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Ris, rions, riez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je rie, que tu ries, qu'il rie, que nous riions, que vous riez, qu'ils rient. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je risse, etc., que nous rissions, etc.                                       |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Rire.   |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Riant, ri.  |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Suivre** (=to follow).

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>Prim. Tenses.</i> | Suivre, suivant, suivi, je suis, je suivis.                        |
| <i>Ind. Pres.</i>    | Je suis, tu suis, il suit, nous suivons, vous suivez, ils suivent. |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Je suivais, etc., nous suivions, etc.                              |
| <i>Past Def.</i>     | Je suivis, etc., nous suivîmes, etc.                               |
| <i>Fut.</i>          | Je suivrai, etc., nous suivrons, etc.                              |
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i>   | Je suivrais, nous suivrions, etc.                                  |
| <i>Imper.</i>        | Suis, suivons, suivez.   |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i>   | Que je suive, etc., que nous suivions, etc.                        |
| <i>Imperf.</i>       | Que je suivisse, etc., que nous suivissions, etc.                  |
| <i>Infjn.</i>        | Suivre.  |
| <i>Part.</i>         | Suivant, suivi, suivie.  |

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

**Taire** (=to keep silent, to conceal).*Prim. Tenses.* Taire, taisant, tû, je tais, je tus.See *plaire*. Conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir*.**Se taire** (=to hold one's tongue), being a reflexive verb, is conjugated with *être* in its compound tenses.**Traire** (=to milk).*Prim. Tenses.* Traire, trayant, trait, je traais, no *Past. Def.**Ind. Pres.* Je traais, tu traais, il trait, nous trayons, vous trayez, ils traient.*Imperf.* Je trayais, etc., nous trayions, etc.*Fut.* Je traierai, etc., nous traierons, etc.*Cond. Pres.* Je traierais, etc., nous traierions, etc.*Imper.* Trais, trayons, trayez.*Subj. Pres.* Que je traie, etc., que nous trayions, que vous trayiez, qu'ils traient.*Infim.* Traire.*Part.* Trayant, trait, traite.This verb has neither *Past Def.*, nor *Imperf. Subj.*Conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir*.**Vaincre** (=to conquer).*Prim. Tenses.* Vaincre, vainquant, vaincu, je vaincs, je vainquis.*Ind. Pres.* Je vaincs, tu vaincs, il vainc, nous vainquons, vous vainquez, ils vainquent.*Imperf.* Je vainquais, etc., nous vainquions, etc.*Past Def.* Je vainquis, etc., nous vainquimes, etc.*Fut.* Je vaincrai, etc., nous vaincrons, etc.*Cond. Pres.* Je vaincrais, etc., nous vaincristions, etc.*Imper.* Vaincs, vainquons, vainquez.*Subj. Pres.* Que je vainque, etc., que nous vainquions, etc.*Imperf.* Que je vainquisse, etc., que nous vainquissions, etc.*Infim.* Vaincre.*Part.* Vainquant, vaincu, vaincue.Conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir*.**Vivre** (=to live).*Prim. Tenses.* Vivre, vivant, vécu, je vis, je vécus.*Ind. Pres.* Je vis, tu vis, il vit, nous vivons, vous vivez, ils vivent.*Imperf.* Je vivais, etc., nous vivions, etc.*Past Def.* Je vécus, etc., nous vécûmes, etc.*Fut.* Je vivrai, etc., nous vivrons, etc.

|                    |   |
|--------------------|---|
| <i>Cond. Pres.</i> | Je vivrais, etc., nous vivrions, etc.             |
| <i>Imper.</i>      | Vis, vivons, vivez.                               |
| <i>Subj. Pres.</i> | Que je vive, etc., que nous vivions, etc.         |
| <i>Imperf.</i>     | Que je véécusse, etc., que nous véécussions, etc. |
| <i>Injin.</i>      | Vivre.  |
| <i>Part.</i>       | Vivant, véécue.                                   |

Conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir*.

### QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. What is the difference between an irregular and a defective verb?
2. Give the future of *mener*, and the indicative present of *appeler*.
3. Give the present participle of *effacer*, and the past participle of *percer*.
4. Write the imperfect of *venger*, the past participle of *bénir*, and the future of *aller* and *enlever*.
5. Write the following verbs in the subjunctive present:—*acquiescer*, *bouillir*, *courir*, *cueillir*.
6. Write the following verbs in the future:—*mourir*, *saillir*, *tenter*, *venir*, *braire*.
7. Write the following verbs in the indicative present:—*dormir*, *faillir*, *gêner*.
8. Write the following verbs in the conditional:—*accéder*, *accrot*, *échoir*, *fallotr*, *mouvoir*, *pleuvotr*, *pouvoitr*, *choir*, *savoir*, *voloitr*, *coloitr*, *soulotr*.
9. Write the following verbs in the indicative present, and past definite:—*coudre*, *dire*, *éclorre*, *faire*, *frêre*, *naitre*, *prendre*, *résoudre*, *traire*, *vaincre*.

### Exercise 34.

#### Première conjugaison.

1. Je vais à la poste. 2. Vas-tu lire ce livre? 3. Ce cheval ne va pas vite. 4. Ne vont-ils pas tous les jours à leur bureau? 5. J'irai dimanche matin à l'église. 6. N'iriez-vous pas au concert? 7. Ne croyez pas que j'aille à Paris l'été prochain. 8. Je ne voudrais pas qu'il allât se compromettre. 9. Quand m'enverrez-vous mon argent? 10. Nous vous enverrions ces livres si nous les avions. 11. Je me lève tous les matins à six heures. 12. J'achèterais cette maison de campagne. 13. Il m'appellera quand il sera prêt. 14. Traçons un tableau complet de la situation. 15. En rangeant ma bibliothèque, j'ai trouvé votre lettre.

<sup>1</sup> morceau (m.), <sup>2</sup> penser, <sup>3</sup> se lever, <sup>4</sup> de bonne heure, <sup>5</sup> tous les matins, <sup>6</sup> bureau, (m.), <sup>7</sup> menacer, <sup>8</sup> revue (f.), <sup>9</sup> achever, <sup>10</sup> cacheter.

1. I shall send you some books. 2. Would you go to the concert? 3. Let us eat a piece<sup>1</sup> of bread. 4. I do not think<sup>2</sup> that he gets up<sup>3</sup> early.<sup>4</sup> 5. This child goes to (the) school every morning.<sup>5</sup> 6. Will you go to your office<sup>6</sup>? 7. Let us threaten<sup>7</sup> him. 8. He will call you to-morrow. 9. We went yesterday to see a review.<sup>8</sup> 10. You would send too little (of) money. 11. That they might protect that bad man. 12. Finish<sup>9</sup> this book. 13. That he may seal<sup>10</sup> the letter.

*to bless*

**Seconde conjugaison.**

1. Béni soit-il pour toute sa générosité. 2. J'ai mangé du pain béni. 3. Les sciences et les arts florissaient sous le règne de Louis XIV. 4. Nous haïssons les méchants, mais il hait les hommes vertueux. 5. Il acquiert de jour en jour plus de réputation. 6. Nous accourûmes à sa voix. 7. Ci-gît le meilleur des rois. 8. Je me suis enquis de votre ami partout. 9. Il fuirait les flatteurs. 10. Cueillerai-je ces jolies fleurs? 11. Croyez-vous qu'il m'en offrir, si j'allais le voir? 12. Je me meurs. 13. Les forces lui défailent. 14. Il mourut de chagrin. 15. J'ai très-bien dormi. 16. Je requiers votre secours. 17. Faites bouillir un peu d'eau. 18. Je pars ce soir pour la France. 19. Vous ressentiriez les effets de sa colère. 20. Il ne concourra pas pour ce prix. 21. Avez-vous oui dire qu'il mente jamais? 22. Il viendra si vous le souffrez.

\* consentir, \* mariage (m), \* pressentir, \* malheur (m.), \* malade, \* dormir, \* mourir, \* l'année dernière, \* assaillir, \* retranchement (m.), \* se vêtir, \* traversaillir, \* de, \* requis, \* rouvrir, \* male (f.), \* entr'ouvrir, \* obtenir, \* disconvenir de, \* dit, \* devenir, \* haïr, \* désir, \* pays (m.), \* béni, \* prêtre, \* pendant.

1. I consent<sup>1</sup> to the marriage<sup>2</sup> of my son. 2. I apprehend<sup>3</sup> some misfortunes.<sup>4</sup> 3. The patient<sup>5</sup> slept<sup>6</sup> very well yesterday. 4. He died<sup>7</sup> last year.<sup>8</sup> 5. Shall we not assault<sup>9</sup> the enemy tomorrow in his intrenchments<sup>10</sup>? 6. That you might do the yourself<sup>11</sup> a little better. 7. That she might start<sup>12</sup> with<sup>13</sup> fear. 8. He would request<sup>14</sup> a favour from you. 9. I shall open again<sup>15</sup> that trunk.<sup>16</sup> 10. They would half open<sup>17</sup> the window. 11. I shall obtain<sup>18</sup> the consent of my parents. 12. I disowned<sup>19</sup> what he said.<sup>20</sup> 13. Would you not become<sup>21</sup> learned if you worked a little more? 14. We hate<sup>22</sup> (the) hypocrites. 15. Here lies<sup>23</sup> a man who has served his country<sup>24</sup> with zeal. 16. This water has been consecrated<sup>25</sup> by the priest.<sup>26</sup> 17. (The) commerce flourished (imperfect) in our country during<sup>27</sup> his reign.

**Troisième conjugaison.**

1. Tu ne vaux pas mieux que ton frère. 2. C'est un ressort très-ingénieux qui meut la machine. 3. Il faut pratiquer la vertu si l'on veut être heureux. 4. Nous pouvons vous être utiles. 5. Vous ne savez pas votre leçon. 6. Il pleuvait hier. 7. Vous prévaliez sur nous. 8. Nous prévimus toutes les conséquences de cette affaire. 9. Ils s'assirent sur le pont du navire. 10. Vous pourvûtes à la sûreté de la ville. 11. Cette robe vous sied à merveille.

12. Vous verrez mieux d'ici. 13. Cette réponse équivaudrait à un refus. 14. Je ne pense pas qu'il faille lui demander pardon. 15. Qu'ils sachent que je ne les oublie pas. 16. Si je pouvais lui parler, j'obtiendrais ce que je demande. 17. Cette lettre de change géherra lundi. 18. Je crains qu'il ne pleuve. 19. Elle émut le cœur de cet homme insensible.

<sup>1</sup> valoir, <sup>2</sup> guinée, <sup>3</sup> scoir, <sup>4</sup> vouloir, <sup>5</sup> émonvoir, <sup>6</sup> il faut, <sup>7</sup> savoir, <sup>8</sup> chemin (m.), <sup>9</sup> grand, <sup>10</sup> prévoir, <sup>11</sup> pourvoir, <sup>12</sup> à, <sup>13</sup> besoin (m.), <sup>14</sup> chaise (f.), <sup>15</sup> équivaloir, <sup>16</sup> insulte (f.), <sup>17</sup> prévaloir, <sup>18</sup> lettre de change, <sup>19</sup> échoir, <sup>20</sup> falloir, <sup>21</sup> proposer (f.).

(1. This horse is worth<sup>1</sup> two hundred guineas.<sup>2</sup> 2. Has he moved the spring of the machine? 3. We shall see if this dress becomes<sup>3</sup> (to) her.) 4. If you wish<sup>4</sup> to move<sup>5</sup> the heart of that unfeeling man, you must<sup>6</sup> be useful to him. 5. It was raining yesterday. C. You will not know<sup>7</sup> your way<sup>8</sup> in this large<sup>9</sup> town. 7. Did you foresee<sup>10</sup> the consequences of the battle? 8. I shall provide<sup>11</sup> for<sup>12</sup> your wants.<sup>13</sup> 9. Sit down, gentlemen, here are some chairs.<sup>14</sup> 10. Do you think that his answer is equivalent<sup>15</sup> to an insult<sup>16</sup>? 11. I shall prevail<sup>17</sup> upon him. 12. When will your bill<sup>18</sup> fall due? <sup>19</sup> 13. We did not suppose that it was necessary<sup>20</sup> to accept his proposal.<sup>21</sup> 14. These colours will never become you. 15. He knows his lesson wonderfully well. 16. Do you see this magnificent landscape? +

#### Quatrième conjugaison.

1. Je buvais un verre d'eau. 2. Il écrivit à ses enfants. 3. Croyez-vous qu'il comprenne votre remarque? 4. Je ferai tout mon possible pour vous servir. 5. S'il vous connaissait mieux, il vous croirait. 6. Permettez-moi de vous accompagner chez vous. 7. Je désirerais que vous lussiez ce bel ouvrage. 8. Ces enfants souriaient. 9. Ils se plurent beaucoup dans votre société. 10. Je veux qu'il prenne un parti énergique. 11. Je le suivrais partout. 12. Nous apprendrions ces règles avec facilité. 13. Il vécut heureux et mourut à un âge avancé. 14. Ils trayaient leurs vaches. 15. Il me nuit dans toutes les occasions. 16. Pourquoi n'absoudrions-nous pas ce pauvre homme? 17. Il défit les ennemis à deux reprises différentes. 18. Ils abattirent le mur. 19. Ne déplurent-ils pas à leur maître? 20. Poursuis ton chemin. 21. Faites votre devoir. 22. Ils se repurent de chimères. 23. Cet arbre crotrait rapidement s'il était arrosé. 24. Il éteignit les chandelles. 25. Ne plaignaient-ils pas vos malheurs? 26. Ils disparurent bientôt. 27. Enjoignez-lui de terminer cette affaire.

rules  
disparurent  
disparurent  
disparurent

plurent  
vécut  
disparurent  
disparurent  
disparurent

<sup>1</sup>boire, <sup>2</sup>décrire, <sup>3</sup>croire, <sup>4</sup>comprendre, <sup>5</sup>suivre, <sup>6</sup>à travers, <sup>7</sup>tous les, <sup>8</sup>abattre, <sup>9</sup>absoudre, <sup>10</sup>disparaître, <sup>11</sup>croître, <sup>12</sup>se plaindre, <sup>13</sup>se requiire de, <sup>14</sup>châtrer (f.), <sup>15</sup>vivre, <sup>16</sup>défaite, <sup>17</sup>aucun, <sup>18</sup>atteindre, <sup>19</sup>balle (f.), <sup>20</sup>traire, <sup>21</sup>vache, <sup>22</sup>souffrir, <sup>23</sup>atteindre, <sup>24</sup>lampe (f.), <sup>25</sup>joindre, <sup>26</sup>réduire, <sup>27</sup>reconduire, <sup>28</sup>feindre, <sup>29</sup>enfrenétre, <sup>30</sup>naitre, <sup>31</sup>sujet, <sup>32</sup>se dédire de, <sup>33</sup>coudeur, <sup>34</sup>traduire, <sup>35</sup>se résoudre à, <sup>36</sup>plaindre, <sup>37</sup>émoudre, <sup>38</sup>légume (m.), <sup>39</sup>contre, <sup>40</sup>vinagre.

1. I never drink <sup>1</sup>wine. 2. Have you written <sup>2</sup>to your father? 3. I thought <sup>3</sup>that you understood <sup>4</sup>me. 4. I shall follow <sup>5</sup>him through <sup>6</sup>every <sup>7</sup>obstacle. 5. They were felling <sup>8</sup>a tree. 6. I absolve <sup>9</sup>you. 7. When did he disappear <sup>10</sup>? 8. These trees have grown <sup>11</sup>a great deal lately. 9. I shall complain <sup>12</sup>of you. 10. Do not feed on <sup>13</sup>idle dreams. <sup>14</sup> 11. This stupid poem will never live. <sup>15</sup> 12. I shall defeat <sup>16</sup>the enemy without any <sup>17</sup>difficulty. <sup>18</sup> 13. He has been struck <sup>18</sup>by a bullet. <sup>19</sup> 14. I do not believe you. <sup>15</sup> 15. Have you milked <sup>20</sup>the cows <sup>21</sup>? 16. He is always smiling. <sup>22</sup> 17. Put out <sup>23</sup>the lamp. <sup>24</sup> 18. If you join <sup>25</sup>your efforts, you will succeed. 19. Would he drive <sup>26</sup>you to (the) despair? 20. I shall take you back <sup>27</sup>in my carriage. 21. He pretended <sup>28</sup>to be ill. 22. Will they not infringe <sup>29</sup>the laws? 23. We are born <sup>30</sup>liable <sup>31</sup>to many (of) infirmities. 24. We would withdraw <sup>32</sup>our accusation. 25. They will sew <sup>33</sup>on this button. 26. She translated <sup>34</sup>her letter. 27. Let them resolve <sup>35</sup>to suffer much. 28. That they may pity <sup>36</sup>his fall. 29. I have ground <sup>37</sup>your knives. 30. These vegetables <sup>38</sup>are pickled <sup>39</sup>in (some) vinegar. <sup>40</sup>

## SECTION X.

## FORMATION OF THE VERBS.

*beginning*  
**177.** New French verbs are formed by placing before them: 1. a noun: **maintenir** (=to maintain [properly *tenir avec la main* =to hold with the hand]);—2. an adjective employed adverbially or an adverb: **mal traiter**, **traiter mal** (=to ill-use);—3. a prefix: **défaire** *dé...* and **faire** (=to undo); **surmonter**, *sur* and **monter** (=to surmount).

The most important of the prefixes are the following: 1. **contre** (=against), **dire**, **contredire** (=to say, to contradict); **signer**, **contresigner** (=to sign, to countersign); 2. **entre** (=between), **voir**, **entrevoir** (=to see, to have a glimpse of); **ouvrir**, **entr'ouvrir** (=to open, to half-open); **aider**, **s'entr'aider**, (=to help, to help one another); **dévoier**, **s'entre-dévoier**

(=to devour, to devour one another); 3. **bien** (=well), *faire, bienfaire* (=to do, to do good); 4. **mal** (=ill), *traiter, maltraiter* (=to treat, to ill-treat); *mener, mal-mener* (=to lead, to treat roughly); 5. **més**, prefix of depreciation, Eng. *mis, allier, mésallier* (=to match, to mis-match); *user, mésuser* (=to use, to misuse); 6. **re**, prefix of return and repetition, *changer, rechanger* (=to change, to change over again); *venir, revenir* (=to come, to come again); *blanchir, reblanchir* (=to whiten, to whiten over again); 7. **sur** (=above, over), *mener, surmener* (=to drive, to overdrive); *chauffer, surchauffer* (=to heat, to overheat); this prefix implies excess. *and*

New verbs are moreover formed in French by adding to substantives the termination **er** of the first conjugation. Thus *barricade* (=a barricade), *fouillage* (=forage), *chemin* (=path, road), *crayon* (=pencil), *frisson* (=shudder), give *barricader, fourrager, cheminer, crayonner, frissonner* (=to barricade, to forage, to journey, to sketch, to shudder). But the most recent words are generally formed with the termination **iser**: *germaniser, napoléoniser, bonapartiser* (=to make German, to win over to the cause of Napoleon or Bonaparte).

**178.** The French language makes up new verbs from *adjectives*, sometimes by the addition of the termination **ir**: *jaune, bleu, gros* (=yellow, blue, big), give *jaunir, bleuir, grossir* (=to become yellow, blue, big); sometimes by adding the termination **ir** and prefixing **a**: *grand, a-grand-ir* (=great, to enlarge), *mince, a-minc-ir* (=thin, to make thin), *maigre, a-maigr-ir* (=lean, to become or make lean), etc.

**179.** The French language creates new verbs with the help of *verbs* already existing, by introducing the three diminutive suffixes: **ot, on, asse**, which give to the words a depreciative sense: *cligner, clign-ot-er* (=to wink, to wink repeatedly); *trembler, trembl-ot-er* (=to tremble, to shiver); *chanter, chant-onn-er* (=to sing, to hum); *griffer, griff-onn-er* (=to scratch, to scribble). *rêver, rêv-asse-er* (=to dream, to muse).

4-17

SECTION XI.

RULES FOR THE AGREEMENT OF THE VERB WITH ITS SUBJECT.

**180.** Every verb must be in the same number and person as its subject: *Je lis* (=I read), *vous chantez* (=you sing).

*Lis* is in the first person singular, because its subject *je* is in the first person singular; *chantez* is in the second person plural, because its subject *vous* is in the second person plural.

**181.** When a verb has two subjects in the singular, it is put in the plural: *Paul et Marie lisent* (=Paul and Mary read).

**182.** When the subjects are of different persons, the verb is put in the first, if there is a pronoun of the first person in the sentence, otherwise it is put in the second: *vous, lui et moi, nous sommes heureux* (=you, he, and I, we are happy); *vous et lui, vous êtes sages* (=you and he are wise). The pronoun *nous* or *vous* is generally expressed before the verb. 4

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <p>1. How are new verbs formed in French?</p> <p>2. Give a list of the prefixes used in connection with the verb.</p> <p>3. Write a list of suffixes added to the substantive;—to the adjective.</p> <p>4. Name a few diminutive verbs.</p> | <p>5. How does the verb agree with its subject?</p> <p>6. In what number is the verb put when there are two subjects?</p> <p>7. In what person is the verb put when the subjects are of different persons?</p> |
|---|--|

Exercise 35.

1. Form new verbs from the following ones, preceded with: (1) a noun (*main*); 2. an adverb (*mal*); 3. a prefix (a. *contre*; b. *entre*; c. *re*; d. *sur*): 1. *tenir*; 2. *mener, traiter, verser*; 3. (a) *dire, faire, carrer*; (b) *prendre, larder, mettre*; (c) *lancer, trancher, vêtir, voir, prendre*; (d) *veiller, seoir, nager, passer, prendre*.

2. Form new verbs of the first conjugation from the following substantives: *ménage, chant, apostrophe, cri*.

3. Form new verbs of the second conjugation (a) from the following adjectives: *bleu, jaune, gros, rouge, sale, verd* (old

Handwritten marks at the bottom left of the page.



spelling of *vert*); (b) from the following adjectives, together with the prefix *a*: *maigre, mince, faible, fado, doux, brute*.

4. Form new verbs from the following ones by placing between the stem and the ending one of the suffixes: (a) *ot*, (b) *on*, (c) *asse*; (a) *eligner, taper*; (b) *chanter, griffer*; (c) *rêver*.

Give in every case the English meaning of the verb, and write out the verbs in the following tenses:—

1. Subjunctive present, conditional past, perfect definite;
2. Indicative present, imperfect subjunctive, conditional present;
3. Future anterior, imperative, imperfect indicative;
4. Pluperfect subjunctive, past anterior, pluperfect indicative.

## CHAPTER VI.

477 OF THE PARTICIPLE.

183. The participle is a word which *participates* at once in the nature of the verb, because it marks a tense: *lisant, ayant lu* (=reading, having read); and in that of the adjective, because it can serve to qualify a noun: *un homme charmant* (=a charming man), *une romance chantée* (=a ballad sung).

*Participe* comes from the Latin accusative *participem* (=that which takes a part, which participates).

184. There are two kinds of participles, the *participle present* and the *participle past*.

The present participle marks an action, and is always invariable: *il est doux de voir des enfants aimant leur mère et lui obéissant avec empressement* (=it is pleasant to see children loving their mother and obeying her with eagerness). 477

The same word becomes an *adjective* when it expresses the quality of a person or thing, in which case it agrees with the noun: *ces enfants sont aimants et obéissants* (=these children are affectionate and obedient).

185. When the present participle is employed as an adjective, it agrees in gender and number with the noun to which it refers: *un homme aimant* (=an affectionate man), *des eaux courantes* (=running waters).

a dans clo

Write!

**186.** The same rule applies to the past participle :  
*un roi honoré* (=an honoured king), *une maison meublée* (=a furnished house), *des champs cultivés* (=cultivated fields).

## QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. What is a participle? Explain the meaning of the word.
2. How many kinds of participles are there?
3. When is the present participle invariable?
4. How can the present participle be distinguished from the adjective?
5. State the rule of agreement for the present participle used as an adjective.
6. What is the rule of agreement for the past participle?

## Exercise 36.

1. Un père obligeant. 2. Une demoiselle obligeante. 3. Cette femme est obligeante, prévenant tout le monde. 4. Des rumeurs alarmant la ville entière. 5. La plainte de ce pauvre esclave est touchante. 6. Une porte battante. 7. Des jeunes gens prévenants. 8. Une attitude suppliante. 9. Un ouvrage terminé. 10. Des fleurs arrachées de leur tige. 11. Des fruits cueillis.

<sup>1</sup> bruit (m.), <sup>2</sup> alarmer, <sup>3</sup> obliger, <sup>4</sup> offre (f.), <sup>5</sup> en, <sup>6</sup> mériter, <sup>7</sup> fêtrir, <sup>8</sup> chaleur (f.) <sup>9</sup> composer, <sup>10</sup> vivre, <sup>11</sup> obéir, <sup>12</sup> billet (m.), <sup>13</sup> suppliant, <sup>14</sup> offensant.

- + 1. These rumours<sup>1</sup> are alarming.<sup>2</sup> 2. An obliging<sup>3</sup> offer.<sup>4</sup>  
 3. By<sup>5</sup> obliging your friends, you will deserve<sup>6</sup> their friendship.  
 4. The flowers have been withered<sup>7</sup> by the heat.<sup>8</sup> 5. (The) society is composed<sup>9</sup> of men living<sup>10</sup> under the same laws.  
 6. Pupils obeying<sup>11</sup> (to) their master. 7. A finished house.  
 8. My two notes<sup>12</sup> are written. 9. A mother loving her children. 10. Slaves entreating<sup>13</sup> the judge. 11. Offensive words.<sup>14</sup>

## CHAPTER VII.

## OF THE ADVERB.

**187.** The **adverb** is a word which serves to modify the significations of the verb, the adjective, or another adverb: *Le cheval court vite* (=the horse runs fast), *cette rose est très-belle* (=this rose is very beautiful), *cet enfant marche très-lentement* (=that child walks very slowly).

*Adverb* comes from the Latin *adverbium*, which means *near the verb*, because that word is usually placed near the verb.

**188.** There are in French eight kinds of adverbs: the adverbs of *place*, of *time*, of *manner*, of *quantity*, of *interrogation*, of *affirmation*, of *negation*, and of *doubt*.

**189.** The principal **adverbs of place** are: *ici* (= here), *là* (= there), *y* (= here or there), *où* (= where), *en* (= in), *loin* (= far), *ailleurs* (= elsewhere), *deçà* (= on this side), *delà* (= on that side), *partout* (= everywhere), *çà* (= here), *dessus* (= above), *dessous* (= beneath), *dedans* (= within), *dehors* (= without), *devant* (= before), *derrière* (= behind), etc. *Je partirai d'ici pour aller partout où tu voudras* (= I shall start from hence to go wherever thou wilt), *restez là* (= remain there), *allons ailleurs* (= let us go elsewhere).

Adverbs of place are either expressed by one word, as *là*, *y*, *où*, *en*; or compounded of two, as *dedans* (from *de* and *dans*), *partout* (from *par* and *tout*), *dessous* (from *de* and *sous*).

**190.** The principal **adverbs of time** are: *quand* (= when), *puis* (= then), *depuis* (= since), *souvent* (= often), *toujours* (= always), *maintenant* (= now), *jamais* (= ever), *aujourd'hui* (= to-day), *demain* (= to-morrow), *hier* (= yesterday), *jadis* (= formerly), *lors*, *alors* (= then), *longtemps* (= for a long time), *enfin* (= at last), etc. *J'irai demain et aussi souvent que tu le voudras* (= I shall go to-morrow, and as often as thou wilt).

These adverbs are either expressed by a single word, as *hier*, *lors*, *quand*, *puis*; or compounded of two words, as *longtemps* (from *long* and *temps*), *aussitôt* (from *aussi* and *tôt*), *ensuite* (from *en* and *suite*).

**191.** The **adverbs of manner** are formed by adding the termination **ment** to a feminine adjective: *Il mourut courageusement*, i.e., *il mourut d'une manière courageuse* (= he died courageously); *il vécut sagement*, i.e., *il vécut d'une manière sage* (= he lived wisely).

#### EXCEPTIONS :

A. If the feminine adjective ends with two vowels, the last one is cut off. *hardie* (= bold), *hardiment* (= boldly).

B. The following adjectives form their adverbs by placing an **acute accent** over the **e** preceding the termination **-ment** :—

|                               |                                    |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <i>aveugle</i> = blind        | <i>aveuglément</i> = blindly       |
| <i>commun</i> = common        | <i>communément</i> = commonly      |
| <i>conforme</i> = conformable | <i>conformément</i> = conformably  |
| <i>confus</i> = confused      | <i>confusément</i> = confusedly    |
| <i>diffus</i> = diffuse       | <i>diffusément</i> = diffusely     |
| <i>énorme</i> = enormous      | <i>énormément</i> = enormously     |
| <i>exprès</i> = express       | <i>expressément</i> = expressly    |
| <i>immense</i> = immense      | <i>immensément</i> = immensely     |
| <i>impuni</i> = unpunished    | <i>impunément</i> = with impunity  |
| <i>obscur</i> = dark          | <i>obscurément</i> = darkly        |
| <i>opiniâtre</i> = obstinate  | <i>opiniâtrément</i> = obstinately |
| <i>précis</i> = precise       | <i>précisément</i> = precisely     |
| <i>profond</i> = deep         | <i>profondément</i> = deeply       |
| <i>uniforme</i> = uniform     | <i>uniformément</i> = uniformly.   |

N.B.—The **e** open of the feminine adjective *complète* (=complete) becomes **é** close in the adverb *complètement* (=completely). ← / →

C. *Brièvement* (=briefly) and *traîtreusement* (=treacherously), commonly used as the adverbs of the adjectives *bref* (=short), and *traître* (=treacherous), are formed in the regular manner from the old feminine adjectives *brève* and *traîtreuse*.

D. The final **i** of *gentil* (=pretty) not being pronounced, the adverb is spelt *gentiment* (=prettily).

192. The adjectives ending in **ent**, **ant** form their adverbs in **emment**, **amment**: *prudent* (=prudent), *prudemment* (=prudently); *obligeant* (=obliging), *obligamment* (=obligingly).

#### EXCEPTIONS :—

A. *Lent* (=slow) and *véhément* (=vehement, violent) form their adverbs *lentement* (=slowly), *véhétement* (=vehemently), according to the general rule. (See § 191.)

B. The adverbs *notamment* (=especially), *nuitamment* (=by night), and *sciemment* (=knowingly), were formed from the Old French adjectives *notant*, *nuitant*, and *scient*, which are now obsolete.

193. Adverbs of quality are also formed in French by the occasional use of the *simple adjective*: *chanter juste* (= to sing in tune), *voir clair* (= to see distinctly), *parler bas* (= to speak in a low voice), etc.

194. The adverbs of manner in *ment* have, like their corresponding adjectives, the three degrees of comparison: *clairement*, **plus** *clairement*, **très-clairement**.

The *adjectives* employed as adverbs of quality have likewise the three degrees of comparison: *chanter juste*, **plus juste**, **très-juste**.

The adverbs of quality, **bien**, **mal**, form their degrees of comparison irregularly: **bien** makes *mieux* in the comparative, *le mieux* in the superlative relative, and *très-bien* in the superlative absolute; **mal** makes *pis* or *plus mal* in the comparative, and *le pis* in the superlative relative, or *très-mal* in the superlative absolute.

In the same way, the adverbs *loin* (= far), *près* (= near), *tôt* (= soon), *tard* (= late), *vite* (= quickly), *volontiers* (= willingly), make **plus loin**, **très-loin**, **plus près**, **très-près**, etc.

NOTE.—Adverbs are generally placed after the verb: *Il parle clairement* (= he speaks clearly).

195. The principal adverbs of quantity are *assez* (= enough), *trop* (= too much), *peu* (= little), *beaucoup* (= much), *très* (= very), *tant* (= so much), etc.

N.B.—*Peu* makes *moins* in the comparative, *le moins* in the superlative relative, and *très-peu* in the superlative absolute.

Adverbs of quantity generally take *de* after them. *Très*, *environ*, *davantage* are exceptions; *bien* requires *des*.

196. The principal adverbs of interrogation are: *pourquoi* (= why), *comment* (= how), *quand* (= when), *combien* (= how much), etc.

197. The principal adverbs of affirmation are: *oui* (= yes), *certes* (= certainly), *vraiment* (= truly), etc.

*Oui* was *oil* in the Old French (see Introduction, p. 3). This *oil* had for its corresponding negative expression *nenil*, which has become in modern French *nenni*, just as *oil* has become *oui*.

198. The principal adverbs of negation are: *non*, *ne*, *pas*, *goutte*, *personne*, *rien*, etc.: **non**, **je ne veux pas** (= no, I will not).

The French have really only two adverbs of negation: *non* and *ne*; the other words, such as *pas*, *point*, *goutte*, are mere substantives: *un pas* (=a step), *un point* (=a point), *une goutte* (=a drop), used adverbially as terms of comparison. Every one knows that, in order to give greater strength to the expression of our judgments, we readily support them by a comparison: *pauvre comme Job* (=as poor as Job), *fort comme un lion* (=as strong as a lion), *féroce comme un tigre* (=as fierce as a tigre), etc.; or by using an estimation: *Cet objet ne vaut pas un sou* (=this object is not worth a penny). In like manner, the adverbial locutions *pas*, *mie*, *goutte*, *point*, etc., were originally employed in a matter-of-fact manner—they were placed, we mean, in a comparison where they had a distinctive signification: *Je ne marche pas* (=I do not walk a step), *je ne vois point* (=I do not see a point), *je ne mange mie* (=I do not eat a crumb), *je ne bois goutte* (=I do not drink a drop), etc.

199. The principal adverbs of doubt are: *peut-être* (=perhaps), *probablement* (=probably): *Il sera probablement ici demain* (=he will probably be here to-morrow).

*Peut-être* is elliptical for *cela peut être*, and this accounts for the fact that it can be followed by *que*: *Peut-être que je viendrai*, i.e. *cela peut être que je viendrai* (=it may be that I shall come).

200. A combination of words having the force of an adverb is called an **adverbial locution**. Thus: *à l'envi* (=vying with each other), *au delà* (=beyond), *en deçà* (=on this side of), *tout à fait* (=quite), *point du tout* (=not at all).

### QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. What is an <i>adverb</i>?—Explain the meaning of the word.</li> <li>2. How many kinds of adverbs are there?</li> <li>3. Name the adverbs of <i>place</i>;—of <i>time</i>.</li> <li>4. What is the comparative of <i>bien</i>?—of <i>mal</i>?—of <i>peu</i>?</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>5. Give a list of the adverbs of <i>quantity</i>—<i>interrogation</i>—<i>affirmation</i>—<i>negation</i>—<i>doubt</i>.</li> <li>6. How do you form adverbs of <i>manner</i>?</li> <li>7. What is meant by an adverbial locution?</li> <li>8. Name a few adjectives used adverbially.</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

### Exercise 37.

1. Il dit toujours la vérité. 2. Elle vient quelquefois. 3. Nous réussissons tôt ou tard. 4. Je suis allé hier à Brighton. 5. Voyez-vous cette maison là-bas? 6. Il est tard; vous ne pouvez venir plus tôt. 7. Parlez peu, mais parlez à propos. 8. Ce que l'on conçoit bien s'énonce clairement, et les mots pour le dire arrivent aisément. 9. Il ne se moquera pas de moi impunément. 10. Ne lui aviez-

vous pas expressément défendu de prendre votre fusil? 11. Puis-  
 que vous le voulez, j'y consens. 12. Je me tiendrai dorénavant  
 sur mes gardes. 13. Cette demoiselle ne chante pas juste.  
 14. Ces élèves étudient à l'envi. 15. Il entra tout à coup.

\* arriver, \* guerrier (m.), \* action (f.), \* entreprise (f.), \* périr, \* gagner, \* en  
 retard, \* se rencontrer, \* paraître, <sup>10</sup> de, <sup>11</sup> se conduire, <sup>12</sup> se rappeler.

1. This event happened <sup>1</sup> suddenly. 2. Whence comes this  
 warrior? 3. How many shares <sup>3</sup> have you bought in this under-  
 taking? 4. We shall certainly perish <sup>5</sup> together. 5. The general  
 has already won <sup>6</sup> two battles. 6. He often loses his money, and  
 he is always late <sup>7</sup> for the train (m.). 7. When shall we meet <sup>8</sup>  
 again? 8. Your daughter seemed <sup>9</sup> quite surprised at <sup>10</sup> my offer.  
 9. The citadel was obstinately attacked by the enemy. 10. I have  
 seen that man everywhere. 11. I went to the Crystal Palace  
 yesterday. 12. Above all, tell him to meet me to-morrow in the  
 park. 13. This child behaves <sup>13</sup> very well. 14. I remember <sup>14</sup> the  
 details of the catastrophe confusedly.

CHAPTER VIII.

OF THE PREPOSITION.

**201.** The **preposition** is an invariable word which  
 serves to unite two words by showing the relation in  
 which the one stands to the other: *Le livre de Paul*  
 (=Paul's book); *utile à l'homme* (=useful to man);  
*de* and *à* are prepositions.

*Preposition* comes from the Latin accusative *propositionem*, from  
*præ* (=before), and *positionem* (=position).

**202.** The relations expressed by prepositions are *six*  
 in number: 1. time: *avant* (=before), *après* (=after),  
*depuis* (=since), etc.; 2. place: *à* (=to, at), *vers*  
 (=towards), *dans* (=in), *chez* (=at or in the house of),  
*devant* (=before), *derrière* (=behind), etc.; 3. manner  
 or means: *par* (=by), *avec* (=with), *sans* (=without),  
*selon* (=according to), etc.; 4. origin or cause: *de* (=of),  
*par* (=by), *pour* (=for); 5. tendency towards or  
 remoteness from: *envers* (=towards), *pour* (=for), *con-  
 tre* (=against), *à* (=to), *de* (of), etc.

**203.** The prepositions sometimes consist of one  
 word, as *à*, *de*, *dans*, *pour*, *par*, *sur*, and are then called

begins *mais* and ends with  
*pois*

**simple prepositions** ; sometimes they are made up of two or more words, as *quant à*, (=as for), *à cause de* (=on account of), *vis-à-vis de* (=opposite), *au-dessus de* (=above, upon), *à l'égard de* (=with regard to), etc., and are then designated as **prepositive locutions**.

**204. REMARK 1.**—The preposition **à** must not be confounded with **a**, third person singular of the verb *avoir* ; **à**, preposition, takes the grave accent : *il monte à cheval* (=he goes on horseback) ; **a**, verb, has no accent : *il a un livre* (=he has a book).

2. **Dès**, preposition, takes the grave accent : *il se lève dès l'aurore* (=he rises with the dawn) ; **des** (=of the), genitive plural of the definite article, takes no accent : *les feuilles des arbres* (=the leaves of the trees).

## SECTION I.

## FORMATION OF SIMPLE PREPOSITIONS.

**205.** The French language has formed new prepositions with the help of:—

1. **Substantives** : *malgré*, from the old French adjective *mal* (=mauvais=bad), and the substantive *gré* (=will=in spite of).

2. **Adjectives** : *sauf* (still found in *sain et sauf* [=safe and sound]=except, but) : *Sauf mes intérêts* (=my interests excepted), *sauf Jean* (=John excepted).

3. **Imperative of verbs** : *voici* (=here is, here are), *voilà* (there is, there are).

These words are compounded of the adverb *ci* and *là* and of *vo*, the old imperative of *voir*. *Voici le loup* (=here is the wolf), means therefore really : *voyez ici le loup* (=see here the wolf), or *le loup est ici* ; *voyez-le* (=the wolf is here ; see him).

4. **Past participles** : *passé* (=over), *vu* (=considering), *excepté* (=except, save), *attendu* (=considering), *passé ce moment* (=the moment being over), *excepté cet homme* (=with the exception of that man), *vu le danger que nous courons* (=considering the danger we are running), *attendu son infirmité* (=considering his infirmity).

We must add to this list *hormis* (=except), spelt in Old French *hor-mis*, that is to say, *mis hors* (=placed outside). In this locution



the participle *mis* (*missus*) was variable; the French of the thirteenth century said: *Cet homme a perdu tous ses enfants, hors mise sa fille* (=this man has lost all his children, with the exception of his daughter). In the fifteenth century the participle *mis* was joined on to the adverb *hors*, and the expression *hors mis* became in its turn a preposition.

5. **Present participles:** *durant, pendant, suivant, concernant, touchant* (from *durer, pendre, suivre, concerner, toucher*). *L'avocat mourut pendant le procès = tandis que le procès était pendant* (=the barrister died whilst the lawsuit was pending), *durant sa vie = sa vie durant* (=as long as his life lasts), *durant le jour = pendant que le jour dure* (=whilst the day lasts).

## SECTION II.

## FORMATION OF PREPOSITIVE LOCUTIONS.

206. They are formed chiefly with the help either of substantives or of adverbs followed by the preposition *de*. Thus nouns, such as *face, force, cause, faute, milieu*, etc., give the prepositive locutions: *en face de* (=opposite), *à force de* (=by dint of), *à cause de* (=on account of), *faute de* (=for want of), *au milieu de* (=in the midst of), etc.; and adverbs, such as *loin, autour, devant*, etc., give *loin de* (=far from), *autour de* (=around), *au devant de* (=in front of), etc.

*Vis-à-vis* is a compound of the same kind. The Old French *vis* (from the Latin *visus*) = *visage* (=the face); hence the locution *vis-à-vis*, which is literally equivalent to *face à face* (=face to face). *Vis* is also found in the word *visière* (=visor); the visor was originally the part of the helmet intended to protect the face

= *vis.*

## SECTION III.

## GOVERNMENT OF PREPOSITIONS.

207. 1. Prepositions usually govern the accusative;  
 2. Prepositive locutions generally govern the genitive;  
 3. The following prepositions and prepositive locutions govern the dative:—

*Jusqu'à, jusques à* (=as far as, until), *quant à* (=as for, as to), *par rapport à* (=with regard to).

Did  
 pres-ber

with a  
 need the  
 an

Cherite

de: 4 +

**208.** The prepositions are always placed, in French, immediately before the object: *De quoi parlez-vous?* (=what are you speaking of?).

**209.** The prepositions must be repeated before every word which they govern: *Il ira à Paris et à Londres* (=he will go to Paris and London).

**210.** The verb governed by a preposition must be put in the infinitive, except in the case of *en*, which governs the present participle: *Ne partez pas sans venir me voir* (=do not start without coming to see me), *il tremble en parlant* (=he trembles whilst speaking).

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <p>1. What is a <i>preposition</i>?</p> <p>2. State the difference between <i>a</i>, verb, and <i>à</i>, preposition;— between <i>des</i>, article, and <i>dès</i> preposition.</p> <p>3. What is a prepositional locution?</p> <p>4. Name the <i>present</i> and <i>past participles</i> used as prepositions.</p> | <p>5. How are <i>prepositional locutions</i> formed with the help (a) of nouns, (b) of adverbs?</p> <p>6. Name the prepositions which govern substantives (a) in the genitive, (b) in the dative, (c) in the accusative.</p> <p>7. What preposition governs the verb in the present participle?</p> <p>8. Where are prepositions placed?</p> |
|---|--|

Exercise 38.

*Did he not see Paris*  
*his neglect*  
*with me*  
*near the river*  
*the fourteen ingrate*  
*Clotilde*  
*Copie home*  
*as piece*

1. Ne va-t-il pas à Paris? 2. Il a été ingrat envers son bienfaiteur. 3. Mon chapeau est dans la chambre. 4. Venez chez moi. 5. Vers le nord, la nature présente un aspect triste et sauvage. 6. Dès aujourd'hui je renonce à la voir. 7. En agissant ainsi vous avez manqué à toutes les convenances. 8. Mettez vos livres sur la table. 9. Irez-vous jusqu'à Berlin? 10. Quant à moi, je meurs de faim. 11. Êtes-vous hors d'affaire? 12. Attendu sa jeunesse, nous ne le punirons pas. 13. Il demeure près de l'église.
- ' près de, ' offense (s), ' doux, ' orage (m.), ' éclater, ' dès.

1. He is going to Paris. 2. I live near the railway. 3. In absolving this man, justice has not been done. 4. Never be ungrateful towards your parents. 5. Considering the nature of the offence, the punishment is extremely mild. 6. During the ceremony, a thunderstorm burst over the town. 7. The troops are out of danger. 8. As for my books, they are in your room. 9. Towards the river you will find a pretty country-house. 10. The book shall be sent to the printer's as early as to-morrow morning. 11. The laws are the same in France and Algeria.

## CHAPTER IX.

## OF THE CONJUNCTION.

**211.** The conjunction is an invariable word which serves to unite together two words or two propositions: *Pierre et Paul sont frères* (= Peter and Paul are brothers), *aimons Dieu puisqu'il est bon* (= let us love God, since He is good); **et**, **puisque** are conjunctions.

*Conjunction* :- from the Latin accusative *conjunctionem* (= conjunction, properly union).

**212.** The conjunctions are sometimes one single word, as *et*, *ou*, *si*, *mais*, etc., and are then called **simple conjunctions**; sometimes they are formed of two or more words: *tandis que*, *bien que*, *parce que*, and are then designated as **conjunctive locutions**.

**213.** The principal **simple conjunctions** are: *car* (= for), *comme* (= as), *donc* (= then, therefore), *et* (= and), *mais* (= but), *or* (= now, but), *ou* (= or), *que* (= that), *quand* (= though, even though), *ni* (= nor), *si* (= if), each of which is really only one word.

To the above list we must add the conjunctions such as *plutôt* (= rather), *puisque* (= since), *néanmoins* (= nevertheless), *cependant* (= meanwhile), *lorsque* (= when), which are really compounded of two distinct words (*plus-tôt*, *puis-que*, *néant-moins*, *co-pondant*, *lors-que*), combined into one by modern orthography.

**214.** The principal **conjunctive locutions** are: *au contraire*, (= on the contrary), *au moins* (= at least), *tandis que* (= whilst), *alors que* (= when, now that), *sans que* (= without), *dès que* (= as soon as), *avant que* (= before that), *après que* (= after that), etc.

**215. REMARK.—1. Que** is a relative pronoun when used instead of *lequel*, *laquelle*; it is an adverb when used instead of *combien*; it is a conjunction when it serves to unite two clauses of a sentence: *J's crois que Dieu est saint* (= I believe that God is holy).

puis

parce

parce que

car

since  
that  
because  
for

4-1

2. **Où**, adverb (=where, when), points out a place or a time, and takes the grave accent; **ou**, conjunction (=or) takes no accent: *Mon frère ou moi* (=my brother or I).

3. **Si** is an adverb when it can be used instead of *tant, tellement* (=so, so much); in all other cases, it is a conjunction: *Je sortirai si le temps est beau* (=I shall go out if the weather is fine).

216. Conjunctions followed by **de** take the verb in the infinitive. (For the use of the indicative or subjunctive after conjunctions, see Syntax of prepositions).

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. What is a conjunction?  | 5. Distinguish between <i>si</i> , adverb, and <i>si</i> , conjunction.        |
| 2. Distinguish between simple conjunctions, and conjunctive locutions. | 6. In what mood is the verb placed after a conjunction followed by <i>de</i> . |
| 3. When is <i>que</i> an adverb?                                       |  |
| 4. When is <i>où</i> an adverb?  |  |

Exercise 39.

1. Vous et moi, lui ou elle. 2. J'ai fait mon thème, mais je n'ai pas appris ma leçon. 3. Soyez tranquille, <sup>car</sup> le maître est là. 4. Puisque vous ne voulez pas m'accompagner, je ne sortirai pas. 5. Il ferait cela plutôt que de vous le proposer. 6. Le roi a rejeté cette mesure comme trop violente. 7. Il ne sait ni lire, ni écrire. 8. Il a perdu beaucoup d'argent, néanmoins il persiste à jouer. 9. Quoiqu'il aille à Londres, il ne verra pas son ami.

since  
this

king  
read  
rearranges

<sup>1</sup> pourvu que, <sup>2</sup> rêver, <sup>3</sup> grandeur (*J*), <sup>4</sup> quoique, <sup>5</sup> parce que, <sup>6</sup> indisposé, <sup>7</sup> dire, <sup>8</sup> tandis que, <sup>9</sup> deguiser, <sup>10</sup> que, <sup>11</sup> à moins que, <sup>12</sup> ne changez, <sup>13</sup> abandonner, <sup>14</sup> part (*J*).

write

1. Provided<sup>1</sup> you are<sup>2</sup> attentive, you will succeed.<sup>3</sup> 2. Neither gold nor greatness<sup>4</sup> make a man happy. 3. You and I shall go together. 4. Although<sup>4</sup> I do<sup>5</sup> all (that which) I can, I do not succeed. 5. If we do not succeed, it will not be our fault. 6. I cannot come because<sup>6</sup> I am unwell.<sup>6</sup> 7. We speak<sup>7</sup> the truth, whereas<sup>8</sup> your friend always disguises<sup>8</sup> it. 8. Whether<sup>10</sup> I was<sup>8</sup> hungry or not, you should have kept the dinner on the table. 9. Unless<sup>11</sup> you alter<sup>12</sup> your plans, I shall give up<sup>13</sup> my share<sup>13</sup> in the business.

\* These verbs must be put in the subjunctive.

A ceteris

4-7

## CHAPTER X

## OF THE INTERJECTION.

217. The **interjection** is a cry, an exclamation expressing the sudden impulse of the mind: *Ah! Oh! Hé! Hélas!*

*Interjection* comes from the Latin accusative *interjectionem*, which means literally the action of throwing into the middle (of the sentence).

## Principal interjections.

|              |                             |            |                        |
|--------------|-----------------------------|------------|------------------------|
| Joy:         | <i>Bon! Vive la joie!</i>   | Surprise:  | <i>Quoi! Vraiment!</i> |
| Grief:       | <i>Hélas! Aie! Ah! Ouf!</i> | Silence:   | <i>Chut! Paix!</i>     |
| Fear:        | <i>Ha! Hé! Ho!</i>          | Calling:   | <i>Hola! Ho! Hem!</i>  |
| Aversion:    | <i>Ei! Ni done!</i>         | Warning:   | <i>Gare!</i>           |
| Admiration:  | <i>Oh!</i>                  | Attention: | <i>Tenez! Voilà!</i>   |
| Encouraging: | <i>Allons! Courage!</i>     | Disbelief: | <i>Ah! bah!</i>        |

*Ciel! Bis! Bravo! Tout beau* (=softly), are also used in various exclamations.

218. The interjections are formed either with the help of nouns: *paix!* (=silence), *courage!* (=cheer up!), *patience!* (=have patience!), or of verbs: *soit!* (=be it so!), *allons!* (=come on!), *suffit!* (=enough! that will do!). Sometimes they are mere exclamations: *ah! oh!* etc.

**Hélas**, written in Old French in two words: *hé! las!* is formed of the interjection *hé!* and the adjective *las* (*lassus*) which formerly meant *malheureux* = unhappy. The French of the thirteenth century said: *Cette mère est lasse de la mort de son fils* (This mother is unhappy at the death of her son). *Hé! Hé! que je suis* (=Ah! unhappy that I am!). It was only in the fifteenth century that the two words coalesced, and that *hélas* became unspicable. At the same time, *las* lost all its primitive energy, and changed the meaning of *grief* for that of *weariness* or *fatigue*, just as it had happened in the words *gêne* (=inconvenience) and *ennui* (=weariness), which originally meant *torture* and *hatred*, respectively.

**Dame!** which must not be confounded with the feminine substantive *dame* (= lady), is the abbreviation of *Dame-Dieu*, an Old French exclamation equivalent to *Seigneur Dieu* (= Lord God). We constantly find in medieval texts: *que Dame-Dieu nous aide!* (= the Lord God help us!). *Dame-Dieu*, and simply *Dame* (that is to say, Lord God), was used as an interjection; and the exclamation *Ah! dame* (= ah! well), which, nowadays, has lost all meaning, signifies really *Ah! Seigneur!* (= ah! Lord!). The word *dame* is still found in the geographical names *Dammartin*, *Dampierre*, etc., which signify *the Lord Martin*, *the Lord Peter*, etc.

## QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- |   |  |   |
|---|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. What is an <i>interjection</i>?</li> <li>2. Name the principal interjections.</li> <li>• How are interjections formed?</li> </ol> |  | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>4. Explain the original meaning of<br/><i>Hélas!</i> and <i>Dame!</i></li> </ol> |
|---|--|---|

4+

47

The following table will complete and resume all the details given in Section III.

Conjugation of the auxiliary verb **avoir** (=to have), negatively, interrogatively, and interrogatively with a negation.

N.B.—The same scheme is applicable to any transitive verb, and to all neuter verbs conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

*Negatively.*

PRESENT.—**Ne pas avoir** or **n'avoir pas**, not to have.

PAST.—**N'ayant pas eu**, not to have had.

#### PARTICIPLES.

*Negatively.*

PRESENT.—**N'ayant pas**, not having.

PAST.—**N'ayant pas eu**, not having had.

FUTURE.—**Ne devant pas avoir**, not about to have.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

##### PRESENT TENSE.

| <i>Negatively.</i>      | <i>Interrogatively.</i> | <i>Interrog. with a neg.</i> |
|-------------------------|-------------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>I have not, etc.</i> | <i>Have I? etc.</i>     | <i>Have I not? etc.</i>      |
| <b>Je n'ai pas</b>      | ai-je? *                | n'ai-je pas? †               |
| <b>tu n'as pas</b>      | as-tu?                  | n'as-tu pas?                 |
| <b>il n'a pas</b>       | a-t-il?                 | n'a-t-il pas?                |
| <b>nous n'avons pas</b> | avons-nous?             | n'avons-nous pas?            |
| <b>vous n'avez pas</b>  | avez-vous?              | n'avez-vous pas?             |
| <b>ils n'ont pas</b>    | ont-ils?                | n'ont-ils pas?               |

\* Aimé-je? Est-ce que je romps?

† N'aimé-je pas? Est-ce que je ne romps pas?

PAST INDEFINITE.

*I have not had, etc.*

Je n'ai pas eu  
tu n'as pas eu  
il n'a pas eu  
nous n'avons pas eu

vous n'avez pas eu  
ils n'ont pas eu

*Have I had ? etc.*

Ai-je \* eu ?  
as-tu eu ?  
a-t-il eu ?  
avons-nous eu ?

avez-vous eu ?  
ont-ils eu ?

*Have I not had ? etc.*

N'ai-je pas eu ?  
n'as-tu pas eu ?  
n'a-t-il pas eu ?  
n'avons-nous pas eu ?

n'avez-vous pas eu ?  
n'ont-ils pas eu ?

IMPERFECT.

*I had not, etc.*

Je n'avais pas  
tu n'avais pas  
il n'avait pas  
nous n'avions pas  
vous n'aviez pas  
ils n'avaient pas

*Had I ? etc.*

Avais-je ?  
avais-tu ?  
avait-il ?  
avions-nous ?  
aviez-vous ?  
avaient-ils ?

*Had I not ? etc.*

N'avais-je pas ?  
n'avais-tu pas ?  
n'avait-il pas ?  
n'avions-nous pas ?  
n'aviez-vous pas ?  
n'avaient-ils pas ?

PLUPERFECT.

*I had not had, etc.*

Je n'avais pas eu  
tu n'avais pas eu  
il n'avait pas eu  
nous n'avions pas eu  
vous n'aviez pas eu  
ils n'avaient pas eu

*Had I had ? etc.*

avais-je eu ?  
avais-tu eu ?  
avait-il eu ?  
avions-nous eu ?  
aviez-vous eu ?  
avaient-ils eu ?

*Had I not had ? etc.*

N'avais-je pas eu ?  
n'avais-tu pas eu ?  
n'avait-il pas eu ?  
n'avions-nous pas eu ?  
n'aviez-vous pas eu ?  
n'avaient-ils pas eu ?

PAST DEFINITE OR PRETERPERFECT.

*I had not, etc.*

Je n'eus pas  
tu n'eus pas  
il n'eut pas  
nous n'eûmes pas  
vous n'eûtes pas  
ils n'eurent pas

*Had I ? etc.*

Eus-je ?  
eus-tu ?  
eut-il ?  
eûmes-nous ?  
eûtes-vous ?  
eurent-ils ?

*Had I not ? etc.*

N'eus-je pas ?  
n'eus-tu pas ?  
n'eut-il pas ?  
n'eûmes-nous pas ?  
n'eûtes-vous pas ?  
n'eurent-ils pas ?

\* The e of *je* is not dropped in the interrogation before a vowel.



## PAST ANTERIOR.

|                            |                        |                             |
|----------------------------|------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>I had not had, etc.</i> | <i>Had I had? etc.</i> | <i>Had I not had? etc.</i>  |
| Je n'ous <b>pas</b> eu     | Eus-je eu?             | N'ous-je <b>pas</b> eu?     |
| tu n'ens <b>pas</b> eu     | ens-tu eu?             | n'ens-tu <b>pas</b> eu?     |
| il n'eut <b>pas</b> eu     | eut-il eu?             | n'eut-il <b>pas</b> eu?     |
| nous n'eûmes <b>pas</b> eu | eûmes-nous eu?         | n'eûmes-nous <b>pas</b> eu? |
| vous n'eûtes <b>pas</b> eu | eûtes-vous eu?         | n'eûtes-vous <b>pas</b> eu? |
| ils n'eurent <b>pas</b> eu | eurent-ils eu?         | n'eurent-ils <b>pas</b> eu? |

## FUTURE.

|                               |                           |                               |
|-------------------------------|---------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>I shall not have, etc.</i> | <i>Shall I have? etc.</i> | <i>Shall I not have? etc.</i> |
| Je n'aurai <b>pas</b>         | Aurai-je?                 | N'aurai-je <b>pas</b> ?       |
| tu n'auras <b>pas</b>         | auras-tu?                 | n'auras-tu <b>pas</b> ?       |
| il n'aura <b>pas</b>          | aura-t-il?                | n'aura-t-il <b>pas</b> ?      |
| nous n'aurons <b>pas</b>      | aurons-nous?              | n'aurons-nous <b>pas</b> ?    |
| vous n'aurez <b>pas</b>       | aurez-vous?               | n'aurez-vous <b>pas</b> ?     |
| ils n'auront <b>pas</b>       | auront-ils?               | n'auront-ils <b>pas</b> ?     |

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

|                                   |                               |                                   |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <i>I shall not have had, etc.</i> | <i>Shall I have had? etc.</i> | <i>Shall I not have had? etc.</i> |
| Je n'aurai <b>pas</b> eu          | Aurai-je eu?                  | N'aurai-je <b>pas</b> eu?         |
| tu n'auras <b>pas</b> eu          | auras-tu eu?                  | n'auras-tu <b>pas</b> eu?         |
| il n'aura <b>pas</b> eu           | aura-t-il eu?                 | n'aura-t-il <b>pas</b> eu?        |
| nous n'aurons <b>pas</b> eu       | aurons-nous eu?               | n'aurons-nous <b>pas</b> eu?      |
| vous n'aurez <b>pas</b> eu        | aurez-vous eu?                | n'aurez-vous <b>pas</b> eu?       |
| ils n'auront <b>pas</b> eu        | auront-ils eu?                | n'auront-ils <b>pas</b> eu?       |

## CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

|                                |                            |                                |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>I should not have, etc.</i> | <i>Should I have? etc.</i> | <i>Should I not have? etc.</i> |
| Je n'aurais <b>pas</b>         | Aurais-je?                 | N'aurais-je <b>pas</b> ?       |
| tu n'aurais <b>pas</b>         | aurais-tu?                 | n'aurais-tu <b>pas</b> ?       |
| il n'aurait <b>pas</b>         | aurait-il?                 | n'aurait-il <b>pas</b> ?       |
| nous n'aurions <b>pas</b>      | aurions-nous?              | n'aurions-nous <b>pas</b> ?    |
| vous n'auriez <b>pas</b>       | auriez-vous?               | n'auriez-vous <b>pas</b> ?     |
| ils n'auraient <b>pas</b>      | auraient-ils?              | n'auraient-ils <b>pas</b> ?    |

CONDITIONAL PAST.

|  |  |  |
|--|--|--|
| <i>I should not have had, etc.</i>   | <i>Should I have had ? etc.</i>  | <i>Should I not have had, etc.</i>   |
| Je n'aurais pas eu<br>tu n'aurais pas eu<br>il n'aurait pas eu<br>nous n'aurions pas eu<br>vous n'auriez pas eu<br>ils n'auraient pas eu | Aurais-je eu ?<br>aurais-tu eu ?<br>aurait-il eu ?<br>aurions-nous eu ?<br>auriez-vous eu ?<br>auraient-ils eu ? | N'aurais-je pas eu ?<br>n'aurais-tu pas eu ?<br>n'aurait-il pas eu ?<br>n'aurions-nous pas eu ?<br>n'auriez-vous pas eu ?<br>n'auraient-ils pas eu ? |
| or   | or   | or   |
| Je n'eusse pas eu<br>tu n'eusses pas eu<br>il n'eût pas eu<br>nous n'eussions pas eu<br>vous n'eussiez pas eu<br>ils n'eussent pas eu    | Eussé-je eu ?<br>eusses-tu eu ?<br>eût-il eu ?<br>eussions-nous eu ?<br>eussiez-vous eu ?<br>eussent-ils eu ?    | N'eussé-je pas eu ?<br>n'eusses-tu pas eu ?<br>n'eût-il pas eu ?<br>n'eussions-nous pas eu ?<br>n'eussiez-vous pas eu ?<br>n'eussent-ils pas eu ?    |

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

*Negatively.*

|  |   |
|--|---|
| PRESENT.                               | PAST.   |
| <i>Have not</i>                        | <i>Have not had.</i>                            |
| N'aie pas<br>n'ayons pas<br>n'ayez pas | N'aie pas eu<br>n'ayons pas eu<br>n'ayez pas eu |

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Negatively.*

|   |   |
|---|---|
| PRESENT OR FUTURE.  | PAST.   |
| <i>That I may not have, etc.</i>  | <i>That I may not have had, etc.</i>  |
| Que je n'aie pas<br>que tu n'aies pas<br>qu'il n'ait pas<br>que nous n'ayons pas<br>que vous n'ayez pas<br>qu'ils n'aient pas | Que je n'aie pas eu<br>que tu n'aies pas eu<br>qu'il n'ait pas eu<br>que nous n'ayons pas eu<br>que vous n'ayez pas eu<br>qu'ils n'aient pas eu |

## IMPERFECT.

*That I might not have, etc.*

Que je n'eusse pas  
 que tu n'eusses pas  
 qu'il n'eût pas  
 que nous n'eussions pas  
 que vous n'eussiez pas  
 qu'ils n'eussent pas

## PLUPERFECT.

*That I might not have had, etc*

Que je n'eusse pas eu  
 que tu n'eusses pas eu  
 qu'il n'eût pas eu  
 que nous n'eussions pas eu  
 que vous n'eussiez pas eu  
 qu'ils n'eussent pas eu.

*Conjugation of the auxiliary verb être (= to be), negatively,  
 interrogatively, and interrogatively with a negation.*

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

*Negatively.*PRESENT.—**Ne pas être** or **n'être pas**, *not to be.*PAST.—**N'avoir pas été**, *not to have been.*

## PARTICIPLES.

*Negatively.*PRESENT.—**N'étant pas**, *not being.*PAST.—**N'ayant pas été**, *not having been.*FUTURE.—**Ne devant pas être**, *not about to be.*

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT TENSE.

*Negatively.**I am not, etc.*

Je ne suis pas  
 tu n'es pas  
 il n'est pas  
 nous ne sommes pas

vous n'êtes pas  
 ils ne sont pas

*Interrogatively.**Am I? etc.*

Suis-je ?  
 es-tu ?  
 est-il ?  
 sommes-nous ?

êtes-vous ?  
 sont-ils ?

*Interrog. with a neg.**Am I not? etc.*

Ne suis-je pas ?  
 n'es-tu pas ?  
 n'est-il pas ?  
 ne sommes-nous pas ?

n'êtes-vous pas ?  
 ne sont-ils pas ?

PAST INDEFINITE.

|                              |                          |                              |
|------------------------------|--------------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>I have not been, etc.</i> | <i>Have I been? etc.</i> | <i>Have I not been? etc.</i> |
| Je n'ai pas été              | Ai-je été?               | N'ai-je pas été?             |
| tu n'as pas été              | as-tu été?               | n'as-tu pas été?             |
| il n'a pas été               | a-t-il été?              | n'a-t-il pas été?            |
| nous n'avons pas été         | avons-nous été?          | n'avons-nous pas été?        |
| vous n'avez pas été          | avez-vous été?           | n'avez-vous pas été?         |
| ils n'ont pas été            | ont-ils été?             | n'ont-ils pas été?           |

IMPERFECT.

|                        |                    |                        |
|------------------------|--------------------|------------------------|
| <i>I was not, etc.</i> | <i>Was I? etc.</i> | <i>Was I not? etc.</i> |
| Je n'étais pas         | Étais-je?          | N'étais-je pas?        |
| tu n'étais pas         | étais-tu?          | n'étais-tu pas?        |
| il n'était pas         | était-il?          | n'était-il pas?        |
| nous n'étions pas      | étions-nous?       | n'étions-nous pas?     |
| vous n'étiez pas       | étiez-vous?        | n'étiez-vous pas?      |
| ils n'étaient pas      | étaient-ils?       | n'étaient-ils pas?     |

PLUPERFECT.

|                             |                         |                             |
|-----------------------------|-------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>I had not been, etc.</i> | <i>Had I been? etc.</i> | <i>Had I not been? etc.</i> |
| Je n'avais pas été          | Avais-je été?           | N'avais-je pas été?         |
| tu n'avais pas été          | avais-tu été?           | n'avais-tu pas été?         |
| il n'avait pas été          | avait-il été?           | n'avait-il pas été?         |
| nous n'avions pas été       | avions-nous été?        | n'avions-nous pas été?      |
| vous n'aviez pas été        | aviez-vous été?         | n'aviez-vous pas été?       |
| ils n'avaient pas été       | avaient-ils été?        | n'avaient-ils pas été?      |

PAST DEFINITE or PRÆTERPERFECT.

|                        |                    |                        |
|------------------------|--------------------|------------------------|
| <i>I was not, etc.</i> | <i>Was I? etc.</i> | <i>Was I not? etc.</i> |
| Je ne fus pas          | Fus-je?            | Ne fus-je pas?         |
| tu ne fus pas          | fus-tu?            | ne fus-tu pas?         |
| il ne fut pas          | fut-il?            | ne fut-il pas?         |
| nous ne fûmes pas      | fûmes-nous?        | ne fûmes-nous pas?     |
| vous ne fûtes pas      | fûtes-vous?        | ne fûtes-vous pas?     |
| ils ne furent pas      | furent-ils?        | ne furent-ils pas?     |

## PAST ANTERIOR.

|                                |                         |                                 |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------|---------------------------------|
| <i>I had not been, etc.</i>    | <i>Had I been? etc.</i> | <i>Had I not been? etc.</i>     |
| Je <b>n'eus pas</b> été        | Eus-je été?             | <b>N'eus-je pas</b> été?        |
| tu <b>n'eus pas</b> été        | eus-tu été?             | <b>n'eus-tu pas</b> été?        |
| il <b>n'eut pas</b> été        | eut-il été?             | <b>n'eut-il pas</b> été?        |
| nous <b>n'eûmes pas</b><br>été | eûmes-nous été?         | <b>n'eûmes-nous pas</b><br>été? |
| vous <b>n'eûtes pas</b> été    | eûtes-vous été?         | <b>n'eûtes-vous pas</b> été?    |
| ils <b>n'eurent pas</b> été    | eurent-ils été?         | <b>n'eurent-ils pas</b> été?    |

## FUTURE.

|                             |                         |                             |
|-----------------------------|-------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>I shall not be, etc.</i> | <i>Shall I be? etc.</i> | <i>Shall I not be? etc.</i> |
| Je <b>ne serai pas</b>      | Serai-je?               | <b>Ne serai-je pas?</b>     |
| tu <b>ne seras pas</b>      | seras-tu?               | <b>ne seras-tu pas?</b>     |
| il <b>ne sera pas</b>       | sera-t-il?              | <b>ne sera-t-il pas?</b>    |
| nous <b>ne serons pas</b>   | serons-nous?            | <b>ne serons-nous pas?</b>  |
| vous <b>ne serez pas</b>    | seriez-vous?            | <b>ne serez-vous pas?</b>   |
| ils <b>ne seront pas</b>    | seront-ils?             | <b>ne seront-ils pas?</b>   |

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

|                                    |                                |                                    |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <i>I shall not have been, etc.</i> | <i>Shall I have been? etc.</i> | <i>Shall I not have been? etc.</i> |
| Je <b>n'aurai pas</b> été          | Aurai-je été?                  | <b>N'aurai-je pas</b> été?         |
| tu <b>n'auras pas</b> été          | auras-tu été?                  | <b>n'auras-tu pas</b> été?         |
| il <b>n'aura pas</b> été           | aura-t-il été?                 | <b>n'aura-t-il pas</b> été?        |
| nous <b>n'aurons pas</b><br>été    | aurons-nous été?               | <b>n'aurons-nous pas</b><br>été?   |
| vous <b>n'aurez pas</b> été        | auriez-vous été?               | <b>n'aurez-vous pas</b><br>été?    |
| ils <b>n'auront pas</b> été        | auront-ils été?                | <b>n'auront-ils pas</b> été?       |

## CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

|                              |                          |                              |
|------------------------------|--------------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>I should not be, etc.</i> | <i>Should I be? etc.</i> | <i>Should I not be? etc.</i> |
| Je <b>ne serais pas</b>      | Serais-je?               | <b>Ne serais-je pas?</b>     |
| tu <b>ne serais pas</b>      | serais-tu?               | <b>ne serais-tu pas?</b>     |
| il <b>ne serait pas</b>      | serait-il?               | <b>ne serait-il pas?</b>     |
| nous <b>ne serions pas</b>   | serions-nous?            | <b>ne serions-nous pas?</b>  |
| vous <b>ne seriez pas</b>    | seriez-vous?             | <b>ne seriez-vous pas?</b>   |
| ils <b>ne seraient pas</b>   | seraient-ils?            | <b>ne seraient-ils pas?</b>  |

CONDITIONAL PAST.

|                                     |                                 |                                     |
|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>I should not have been, etc.</i> | <i>Should I have been? etc.</i> | <i>Should I not have been? etc.</i> |
| Je n'aurais pas été                 | Aurais-je été?                  | N'aurais-je pas été?                |
| tu n'aurais pas été                 | aurais-tu été?                  | n'aurais-tu pas été?                |
| il n'aurait pas été                 | aurait-il été?                  | n'aurait-il pas été?                |
| nous n'aurions pas été              | aurions-nous été?               | n'aurions-nous pas été?             |
| vous n'auriez pas été               | auriez-vous été?                | n'auriez-vous pas été?              |
| ils n'auraient pas été              | auraient-ils été?               | n'auraient-ils pas été?             |
| or                                  | or                              | or                                  |
| Je n'eusse pas été                  | Eussé-je été?                   | N'eussé-je pas été?                 |
| tu n'eusses pas été                 | eusses-tu été?                  | n'eusses-tu pas été?                |
| il n'eût pas été                    | eût-il été?                     | n'eût-il pas été?                   |
| nous n'eussions pas été             | eussions-nous été?              | n'eussions-nous pas été?            |
| vous n'eussiez pas été              | eussiez-vous été?               | n'eussiez-vous pas été?             |
| ils n'eussent pas été               | eussent-ils été?                | n'eussent-ils pas été?              |

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

*Negatively.*

|                        |                        |
|------------------------|------------------------|
| PRESENT.               | PAST.                  |
| <i>Do thou not be.</i> | <i>Have not been.</i>  |
| <b>Ne sois pas</b>     | <b>N'aie pas été</b>   |
| <b>ne soyens pas</b>   | <b>n'ayons pas été</b> |
| <b>ne soyez pas</b>    | <b>n'ayez pas été.</b> |

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Negatively.*

|                                 |                                       |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| PRESENT OR FUTURE.              | PAST.                                 |
| <i>That I may not be, etc.</i>  | <i>That I may not have been, etc.</i> |
| Que je <b>ne sois pas</b>       | Que je <b>n'aie pas été</b>           |
| que tu <b>ne sois pas</b>       | que tu <b>n'aies pas été</b>          |
| qu'il <b>ne soit pas</b>        | qu'il <b>n'ait pas été</b>            |
| que nous <b>ne soyons pas</b>   | que nous <b>n'ayons pas été</b>       |
| que vous <b>ne soyez pas</b>    | que vous <b>n'ayez pas été</b>        |
| qu'ils <b>ne soient pas</b>     | qu'ils <b>n'aient pas été</b>         |
| IMPERFECT.                      | PLUPERFECT.                           |
| <i>That I might not be.</i>     | <i>That I might not have been.</i>    |
| Que je <b>ne fusse pas</b>      | Que je <b>n'eusse pas été</b>         |
| que tu <b>ne fusses pas</b>     | que tu <b>n'eusses pas été</b>        |
| qu'il <b>ne fût pas</b>         | qu'il <b>n'eût pas été</b>            |
| que nous <b>ne fussions pas</b> | que nous <b>n'eussions pas été.</b>   |
| que vous <b>ne fussiez pas</b>  | que vous <b>n'eussiez pas été</b>     |
| qu'ils <b>ne fussent pas</b>    | qu'ils <b>n'eussent pas été.</b>      |

*Models of Reflexive Verbs conjugated negatively, interrogatively, and interrogatively with a negation.*

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

*Negatively.*

*Ne pas se réjouir, not to rejoice*    *ne pas s'apercevoir, not to perceive*    *ne pas se perdre, not to lose one's self.*

## PAST.

*Ne pas s'être réjoui, not to have rejoiced*    *ne pas s'être aperçu, not to have perceived*    *ne pas s'être perdu, not to have lost one's self.*

## PARTICIPLES.

## PRESENT.

*Negatively.*

*Ne se réjouissant pas, not rejoicing*    *ne s'apercevant pas, not perceiving*    *ne se perdant pas, not losing one's self.*

## PAST.

*Réjoui, -ie, -is, or -ies, rejoiced*    *aperçu, -ue, -us, or -ues, perceived*    *perdu, -ue, -us, or -ues, lost*  
*ne s'étant pas réjoui, not having rejoiced*    *ne s'étant pas aperçu, not having perceived*    *ne s'étant pas perdu, not having lost one's self.*

## FUTURE.

*Ne devant pas se réjouir, not about to rejoice*    *ne devant pas s'apercevoir, not about to perceive*    *ne devant pas se perdre, not about to lose one's self.*

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT TENSE.

*Negatively.*

*I do not rejoice, etc.*

*Je ne me réjouis pas*

*tu ne te réjouis pas*

*il ne se réjouit pas*

*nous ne nous réjouissons pas*

*vous ne vous réjouissez pas*

*ils ne se réjouissent pas*

*Interrogatively.*

*Do I perceive? etc.*

*M'aperçois-je?*

*t'aperçois-tu?*

*s'aperçoit-il?*

*nous apercevons-nous?*

*vous apercevez-vous?*

*s'aperçoivent-ils?*

*Interrog. with a neg.*

*Do I not lose myself?*

*Est-ce que je ne me perds pas?*

*ne te perds-tu pas?*

*ne se perd-il pas?*

*ne nous perdons-nous pas?*

*ne vous perdez-vous pas?*

*ne se perdent-ils pas?*

## PAST INDEFINITE.

|  |                                  |  |
|--|----------------------------------|--|
| <i>I have not rejoiced, etc.</i>       | <i>Have I perceived? etc.</i>    | <i>Have I not lost myself? etc.</i>        |
| <b>Je ne me suis pas réjoui</b>        | <b>Me suis-je aperçu?</b>        | <b>Ne me suis-je pas perdu?</b>            |
| <b>tu ne t'es pas réjoui</b>           | <b>t'es-tu aperçu?</b>           | <b>ne t'es-tu pas perdu?</b>               |
| <b>il ne s'est pas réjoui</b>          | <b>s'est-il aperçu?</b>          | <b>ne s'est-il pas perdu?</b>              |
| <b>nous ne nous sommes pas réjouis</b> | <b>nous sommes-nous aperçus?</b> | <b>ne nous sommes-nous pas perdus?</b>     |
| <b>vous ne vous êtes pas réjouis</b>   | <b>vous êtes-vous aperçus?</b>   | <b>ne vous êtes-vous pas perdus?</b> [dus? |
| <b>ils ne se sont pas réjouis</b>      | <b>se sont-ils aperçus?</b>      | <b>ne se sont-ils pas per-</b>             |

## IMPERFECT.

|  |                               |                                      |
|--|-------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| <i>I was not rejoicing, etc.</i>         | <i>Was I perceiving? etc.</i> | <i>Was I not losing myself? etc.</i> |
| <b>Je ne me réjouissais pas</b>          | <b>M'apercevais-je?</b>       | <b>Ne me perdais-je pas?</b>         |
| <b>tu ne te réjouissais pas</b>          | <b>t'apercevais-tu?</b>       | <b>ne te perdais-tu pas?</b>         |
| <b>il ne se réjouissait pas</b>          | <b>s'apercevait-il?</b>       | <b>ne se perdait-il pas?</b>         |
| <b>nous ne nous réjouissions pas</b>     | <b>nous apercevions-nous?</b> | <b>ne nous perdions-nous pas?</b>    |
| <b>vous ne vous réjouissiez pas</b> [pas | <b>vous aperceviez-vous?</b>  | <b>ne vous perdiez-vous pas?</b>     |
| <b>ils ne se réjouissaient</b>           | <b>s'apercevaient-ils?</b>    | <b>ne se perdaient-ils pas?</b>      |

## PLUPERFECT.

|  |                                  |   |
|--|----------------------------------|---|
| <i>I had not rejoiced, etc.</i>              | <i>Had I perceived? etc.</i>     | <i>Had I not lost myself? etc.</i>          |
| <b>Je ne m'étais pas réjoui</b>              | <b>M'étais-je aperçu?</b>        | <b>Nem'étais-je pas perdu?</b>              |
| <b>tu ne t'étais pas réjoui</b>              | <b>t'étais-tu aperçu?</b>        | <b>ne t'étais-tu pas perdu?</b>             |
| <b>il ne s'était pas réjoui</b>              | <b>s'était-il aperçu?</b>        | <b>ne s'était-il pas perdu?</b>             |
| <b>nous ne nous étions pas réjouis</b>       | <b>nous étions-nous aperçus?</b> | <b>ne nous étions-nous pas perdus?</b>      |
| <b>vous ne vous étiez pas réjouis</b> [jouis | <b>vous étiez-vous aperçus?</b>  | <b>ne vous étiez-vous pas perdus?</b> [dus? |
| <b>ils ne s'étaient pas ré-</b>              | <b>s'étaient-ils aperçus?</b>    | <b>ne s'étaient-ils pas per-</b>            |

## PAST DEFINITE OR PRETERPERFECT.

|  |                             |   |
|--|-----------------------------|---|
| <i>I did not rejoice, etc.</i>         | <i>Did I perceive? etc.</i> | <i>Did I not lose myself? etc.</i>      |
| <b>Je ne me réjouis pas</b>            | <b>M'aperçus-je?</b>        | <b>Ne me perdis-je pas?</b>             |
| <b>tu ne te réjouis pas</b>            | <b>t'aperçus-tu?</b>        | <b>ne te perdis-tu pas?</b>             |
| <b>il ne se réjouit pas</b>            | <b>s'aperçut-il?</b>        | <b>ne se perdit-il pas?</b>             |
| <b>nous ne nous réjouîmes pas</b> [pas | <b>nous aperçûmes-nous?</b> | <b>ne nous perdimés-nous pas?</b> [pas? |
| <b>vous ne vous réjouîtes</b>          | <b>vous aperçûtes-vous?</b> | <b>ne vous perdités-vous pas?</b>       |
| <b>ils ne se réjouirent pas</b>        | <b>s'aperçurent-ils?</b>    | <b>ne se perdirent-ils pas?</b>         |



## PAST ANTERIOR.

*I had not rejoiced, etc.*

Je ne me fus pas réjoui  
tu ne te fus pas réjoui  
il ne se fut pas réjoui  
nous ne nous fîmes pas  
réjouis  
vous ne vous fîtes pas  
réjouis [réjouis  
ils ne se furent pas

*Had I perceived? etc.*

Me fus-je aperçu?  
te fus-tu aperçu?  
se fut-il aperçu?  
nous fîmes-nous aper-  
çus?  
vous fîtes-vous aper-  
çus?  
se furent-ils aperçus?

*Had I not lost myself? etc.*

Ne me fus-je pas perdu?  
ne te fus-tu pas perdu?  
ne se fut-il pas perdu?  
ne nous fîmes-nous pas  
perdus?  
ne vous fîtes-vous pas  
perdus? [perdus?  
ne se furent-ils pas

## FUTURE.

*I shall not rejoice, etc.*

Je ne me réjouirai pas  
tu ne te réjouiras pas  
il ne se réjouira pas  
nous ne nous réjou-  
irons pas [pas  
vous ne vous réjouirez  
ils ne se réjouiront pas

*Shall I perceive?*

etc.  
M'apercevrai-je?  
t'apercevras-tu?  
s'apercevra-t-il?  
nous apercevrons-  
nous?  
vous apercevrez-vous?  
s'apercevront-ils?

*Shall I not lose myself?*

etc.  
Ne me perdrai-je pas?  
ne te perdras-tu pas?  
ne se perdra-t-il pas?  
ne nous perdrons-nous  
pas? [pas?  
ne vous perdrez-vous  
ne se perdront-ils pas?

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

*I shall not have rejoiced,**etc.*

Je ne me serai pas réjoui  
tu ne te seras pas réjoui  
il ne se sera pas réjoui  
nous ne nous serons pas  
réjouis  
vous ne vous serez pas  
réjouis [réjouis  
ils ne se seront pas

*Shall I have perceived?*

etc.  
Me serai-je aperçu?  
te seras-tu aperçu?  
se sera-t-il aperçu?  
nous serons-nous aper-  
çus?  
vous serez-vous aper-  
çus?  
se seront-ils aperçus?

*Shall I not have lost*

*myself? etc.*  
Ne me serai-je pas per-  
du?  
ne te seras-tu pas perdu?  
ne se sera-t-il pas perdu?  
ne nous serons-nous  
pas perdus?  
ne vous serez-vous pas  
perdus? [dus?  
ne se seront-ils pas per-

## CONDITIONAL MOOD.

## PRESENT.

*I should not rejoice,**etc.*

Je ne me réjouirais pas  
tu ne te réjouirais pas  
il ne se réjouirait pas  
nous ne nous réjou-  
irions pas  
vous ne vous réjou-  
iriez pas [pas  
ils ne se réjouiraient

*Should I perceive?*

etc.  
M'apercevrais-je?  
t'apercevrais-tu?  
s'apercevrait-il?  
nous apercevriions-  
nous?  
vous apercevriez-  
vous?  
s'apercevraient-ils?

*Should I not lose myself?*

etc.  
Ne me perdrais-je pas?  
ne te perdrais-tu pas?  
ne se perdrait-il pas?  
ne nous perdriions-nous  
pas?  
ne vous perdriez-vous  
pas? [pas?  
ne se perdraient-ils

## PAST.

*I should not have rejoiced, etc.*

Je ne me serais pas réjoui

tu ne te serais pas réjoui  
il ne se serait pas réjoui  
nous ne nous serions pas réjouis

vous ne vous seriez pas réjouis [réjouis  
ils ne se seraient pas

or

je ne me fusso pas réjoui

tu ne te fusses pas réjoui  
il ne se fût pas réjoui

nous ne nous fussions pas réjouis

vous ne vous fussiez pas réjouis

ils ne se fussent pas réjouis

*Should I have perceived? etc.*

Me serais-je aperçu?

te serais-tu aperçu?

se serait-il aperçu?

nous serions-nous aperçus?

vous seriez-vous aperçus?

se seraient-ils aperçus?

or

me fussé-je aperçu?

te fusses-tu aperçu?

se fût-il aperçu?

nous fussions-nous aperçus?

vous fussiez-vous aperçus?

se fussent-ils aperçus?

*Should I not have lost myself? etc.*

Ne me serais-je pas perdu? [du?

ne te serais-tu pas perdu? se serait-il pas perdu?

ne nous serions-nous pas perdus?

ne vous seriez-vous pas perdus? [perdus?

ne se seraient-ils pas

or

ne me fussé-je pas perdu? [du?

ne te fusses-tu pas perdu? se fût-il pas perdu?

ne nous fussions-nous pas perdus?

ne vous fussiez-vous pas perdus?

ne se fussent-ils pas perdus?

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

*Negatively.*

## PRESENT.

*Do not rejoice, etc.*

Ne te réjouis pas [pas

Ne nous réjouissons

Ne vous réjouissez pas

*Do not perceive, etc.*

Ne t'aperçois pas [pas

Ne nous apercevons

Ne vous apercevez pas

*Do not lose thyself, etc.*

Ne te perds pas

Ne nous perdons pas

Ne vous perdez pas

## PAST.

*Have not rejoiced, etc.*

Ne te sois pas réjoui

Ne nous soyons pas réjouis [jouis

Ne vous soyez pas ré-

*Have not perceived, etc.*

Ne te sois pas aperçu

Ne nous soyons pas aperçus [çus

Ne vous soyez pas aper-

*Have not lost thyself, etc.*

Ne te sois pas perdu

Ne nous soyons pas perdus [dus

Ne vous soyez pas per-

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Negatively.*

## PRESENT OR FUTURE.

*That I may not rejoice, etc.*

Que je ne me réjouisse pas [pas

que tu ne te réjouisses qu'il ne se réjouisse pas

*That I may not perceive, etc.*

Que je ne m'aperçoive pas [pas

que tu ne t'aperçoives qu'il ne s'aperçoive pas

*That I may not lose myself, etc.*

Que je ne me perde pas

que tu ne te perdes pas qu'il ne se perde pas

que nous *ne nous ré-*  
*jouissions pas*  
que vous *ne vous ré-*  
*jouissiez pas* [*pas*  
qu'ils *ne se réjouissent*

que nous *ne nous aper-*  
*cevions pas*  
que vous *ne vous aper-*  
*ceviez pas* [*pas*  
qu'ils *ne s'aperçoivent*

que nous *ne nous per-*  
*dions pas*  
que vous *ne vous per-*  
*diez pas*  
qu'ils *ne se perdent pas*

## PAST.

*That I may not have re-*  
*joiced, etc.*

Que je *ne me sois pas*  
*réjoui*

que tu *ne te sois pas ré-*  
*joui*

qu'il *ne se soit pas ré-*  
*joui*

que nous *ne nous*  
*soyons pas réjouis*

que vous *ne vous soyez*  
*pas réjouis*

qu'ils *ne se soient pas*  
*réjouis*

*That I may not have per-*  
*ceived, etc.*

Que je *ne me sois pas*  
*aperçu*

que tu *ne te sois pas*  
*aperçu*

qu'il *ne se soit pas aper-*  
*çu*

que nous *ne nous*  
*soyons pas aperçus*

que vous *ne vous soyez*  
*pas aperçus*

qu'ils *ne se soient pas*  
*aperçus*

*That I may not have lost*  
*myself, etc.*

Que je *ne me sois pas*  
*perdu*

que tu *ne te sois pas*  
*perdu*

qu'il *ne se soit pas per-*  
*du*

que nous *ne nous*  
*soyons pas perdus*

que vous *ne vous soyez*  
*pas perdus*

qu'ils *ne se soient pas*  
*perdus*

## IMPERFECT.

*That I might not rejoice,*  
*etc.*

Que je *ne me réjouisse*  
*pas* [*pas*

que tu *ne te réjouisses*  
*qu'il ne se réjouit pas*

que nous *ne nous réjou-*  
*issions pas*

que vous *ne vous réjou-*  
*issiez pas* [*pas*

qu'ils *ne se réjouissent*

*That I might not per-*  
*ceive, etc.*

Que je *ne m'aperçusse*  
*pas* [*pas*

que tu *ne t'aperçusses*  
*qu'il ne s'aperçût pas*

que nous *ne nous aper-*  
*çussions pas*

que vous *ne vous aper-*  
*çussiez pas* [*pas*

qu'ils *ne s'aperçussent*

*That I might not lose*  
*myself, etc.*

Que je *ne me perdisse*  
*pas* [*pas*

que tu *ne te perdisses*  
*qu'il ne se perdit pas*

que nous *ne nous per-*  
*dissions pas*

que vous *ne vous per-*  
*dissiez pas* [*pas*

qu'ils *ne se perdissent*

## PLUPERFECT.

*That I might not have*  
*rejoiced, etc.*

Que je *ne me sois pas*  
*réjoui*

que tu *ne te sois pas ré-*  
*joui*

qu'il *ne se soit pas ré-*  
*joui*

que nous *ne nous*  
*soyons pas réjouis*

que vous *ne vous soyez*  
*pas réjouis*

qu'ils *ne se soient pas*  
*réjouis*

*That I might not have*  
*perceived, etc.*

Que je *ne me sois pas*  
*aperçu*

que tu *ne te sois pas*  
*aperçu*

qu'il *ne se soit pas aper-*  
*çu*

que nous *ne nous*  
*soyons pas aperçus*

que vous *ne vous soyez*  
*pas aperçus*

qu'ils *ne se soient pas*  
*aperçus*

*That I might not have*  
*lost myself, etc.*

Que je *ne me sois pas*  
*perdu*

que tu *ne te sois pas*  
*perdu*

qu'il *ne se soit pas per-*  
*du*

que nous *ne nous*  
*soyons pas perdus*

que vous *ne vous soyez*  
*pas perdus*

qu'ils *ne se soient pas*  
*perdus*

## INDEX.

---

The numbers refer to the paragraphs when the word page is not expressed.

- able** (suffix), 73.  
**accents**, 6, 20; tonic, 24.  
**active verbs**, 134; used impersonally, 163.  
**ade** (suffix), 40, 44.  
**adjective**, 49; qualifying, 50; determinative, 50, 77; indefinite, 50; formation of fem. in, 52 and foll.; formation of, 69 and foll.; derivative, 70 and foll.; agreement of, 74 and foll.; numeral, 78 and foll.; demonstrative, 82; possessive, 83; indefinite, 84, 111; interrogative, 107; used as adverb, 193.  
**adverb**, 187; of place, 189; of time, 190; of manner, 191; how formed, 191, 192; adjectives used as, 193; comparison of, 194; of quantity, 195; of interrogation, 196; of affirmation, 197; of negation, 198; of doubt, 199.  
**adverbial locutions**, 200.  
**age** (suffix), 40, 44.  
**aille** (suffix), 42.  
**ain** (suffix), 40, 71.  
**aller**, 169; *s'en aller*, 169.  
**alphabet**, page 7.  
**ance** (suffix), 44.  
**anti** (prefix), 69.  
**apostrophe**, 21.  
**après** (prefix), 39.  
**archi** (prefix), 69.  
**ard** (suffix), 40, 73.  
**arrière** (prefix), 39.  
**article**, 45; definite, 46 and foll.; indefinite, 48; used in French when *some* or *any* is meant in English, 48.  
**as** (suffix), 42.  
**asse** (suffix), in verbs, 179.  
**at** (suffix), 40.  
**âtre** (suffix), 72.  
**aud** (suffix), 72.  
**auxiliary verbs**, 127, 132; with neuter verbs, 153; with reflexive verbs, 158.  
**avoir**, 132; *y avoir*, page 110.  
**avant** (prefix), 39.  
  
**Basque**, page 1.  
**bénir**, 170.  
**bien** (prefix), 69.  
**bis** (prefix), 24.  
**Breton (Bas-)**, page 1.  
**Burgundian**, pages 1, 3.  
  
**cardinal adjectives**, 79, 81.  
**Catalonian**, page 1.  
**ce**, 100.  
**cedilla**, 22.  
**Celtic**, page 4.  
**celui qui**, 100.  
**cer**, verbs ending in, 167.  
**collective numbers**, 81.  
**comparative in adjectives**, 66; irregular, 67; in adverbs, 194.  
**complement**, 113, 114; direct, 115; indirect, 116.  
**conditional mood**, 121.  
**conjugation**, 130, 131; first, page 79; second, page 83; third, page 86; fourth, page 82; interrogative, 136 and foll.; negative, 141; interrogative and negative, 142; passive, page 99; neuter, page 102; reflexive, page 105; im-

- personal, page 109; observations on first conj., 166 and foll.; on second conj., with imperfect in *issais*, 170; on 2nd (direct) conj., 171; irregular, page 112 and foll.
- conjunction**, 211 and foll.; government of, 216.
- conjunctive locutions**, 214.
- consonants**, 3, 11 and foll.
- contre** (prefix), 39.
- defective verbs**, 165.
- demi** (prefix), 69.
- demonstrative**, *see* adjective and pronoun.
- derivative tenses**, 147.
- determinative**, *see* adjective and pronoun.
- devoir**, page 97, note.
- diæresis**, 21.
- diphthong**, 9.
- é, êe** (suffix), 40, 71.
- eau, elle** (suffix), 42.
- éger** (verbs ending in), 166.
- eler** (verbs ending in), 166.
- eler** (suffix), 72.
- en** (pronoun), 92.
- entre** (prexx), 39.
- envoyer**, 169.
- er, ier** (suffix), 40, 71.
- esse** (suffix), 40, 43.
- et** (suffix), 42, 72.
- eter** (verbs ending in), 166.
- être**, page 75; with neuter verbs, 153.
- eur** (suffix), 44.
- eux** (suffix), 71.
- feminine** (formation of) in nouns, 30 and foll.; in adjectives, 57 and foll.
- Flemish**, page 1.
- fleurir**, 170.
- foreign words**, page 5.
- French patois**, page 2; dialect, page 3; learned, page 5; popular, page 5.
- future tense**, 123, 126.
- Gascon**, pages 2, 4.
- gender**, 29; formation of fem in nouns, 30 and foll.; in adjectives, 52 and foll.
- ger** (verbs ending in), 167.
- grammar** (definition), page 5.
- hair**, 170.
- hyphen**, 23.
- idiomatic tenses**, 148.
- ie (erie)** (suffix), 40, 43.
- if** (suffix), 73.
- imperative mood**, 121.
- imperfect tense**, 125.
- impersonal verbs**, 161; their pronoun subject, 162; active or neuter verbs used as impersonal, 163.
- in** (prefix), 69; (suffix), 71.
- indefinite**, *see* adjective and pronoun.
- indicative mood**, 121.
- infinitive mood**, 121.
- interjection**, 217; how formed, 218.
- interrogative**, *see* adjective and pronoun.
- irregular verbs**, 165; 1st conj., 166 and foll.; 2nd conj. with imperfect in *issais*, 170; 3rd conj. (direct), 171.
- is** (suffix), 44.
- ise** (suffix), 43.
- ison** (suffix), 44.
- isseur** (suffix), 44.
- iste** (suffix), 40.
- Italian**, page 3.
- Languedocian**, pages 2, 4.
- Latin** (popular), pages 2, 3, 4; classical, 2.
- leur**, 92.
- Limousin**, pages 2, 4.
- locutions**, adverbial, 200; prepositive, 203; how formed, 206; conjunctive, 214.
- Lorrain**, page 1.

- mal** (prefix), 69.  
**ment** (suffix), 44.  
**mi** (prefix), 39.  
**moods**, 121.
- neuter verbs**, 152; their auxiliary, 153; used impersonally, 163.  
**non** (prefix), 39.  
**Norman**, pages 1, 3.  
**noun**, *see* substantive.  
**number**, 81; formation of plur. in nouns, 82 and foll.; in adjectives, 62 and foll.; in verbs, 119.  
**numbers**, 81.  
**numeral adjectives**, 78, 81.
- object**, 113; direct, 115; indirect, 116.  
**Oc (langue d')** pages 3, 4.  
**Oil (langue d')**, pages 3, 4.  
**oir** (suffix), 44.  
**on** (suffix), 42, 44; in verbs, 179.  
**ordinal adjectives**, 80, 81.  
**orthographic signs**, 20.  
**ot** (suffix), 42, 72; in verbs, 179.
- participle**, 183; present, 184; used as an adjective, 185.  
**passive verbs**, 149 and foll.; the reflexive used instead, 149, 160.  
**past anterior**, 125.  
**past definite**, 125.  
**past indefinite**, 125.  
**past participle** of passive verbs, 151; of neuter verbs, 154; of reflexive verbs, 159; used as an adjective, 186.  
**past tense**, 123.  
**personal pronouns**, *see* pronouns.  
**persons** in verbs, 120.  
**Picard**, pages 1, 3.  
**pluperfect**, 125.
- plural** (formation of) in nouns, 82 and foll.; in adjectives, 62 and foll.  
**positive**, 65.  
**possessive**, how expressed in French, 48; *see* adjective and pronoun.  
**pouvoir**, page 97, note.  
**prefixes**, 39.  
**prepositions**, 201 and foll.; how formed, 205; government of, 207, 210; their place, 208; repetition of, 209.  
**prepositive locutions**, 203, 206.  
**present participle**, 184; used as an adjective, 185.  
**present tense**, 123.  
**preterite**, *see* past.  
**primitive tenses**, 147.  
**pronouns**, 85; personal, 88; conjunctive, 89; where placed, 90, 92; disjunctive, 93; used as subject, 94; used as object, 95; reflexive, 96; demonstrative, 97 and foll.; possessive, 101; relative, 102 and foll.; interrogative, 106 and foll.; indefinite, 109 and foll.  
**Provençal**, pages 2, 4; Patois, page 2.
- qualifying adjectives**, *see* adjectives.  
**que**, 104, 105, 106.  
**qui**, 104, 106.
- reflexive verbs**, 155; how conjugated, 157; their auxiliary, 158; their past participle, 159; instead of the passive, 149, 160.  
**Romance language**, pages 3, 5.
- sans** (prefix), 39.  
**some**, translated by *du, &c.*, 48.

- sous** (prefix), 39, 69.  
**Spanish**, page 3.  
**speech** (parts of), 25.  
**stem**, 118.  
**subject**, 113; agreement of verb with, 180 and foll.  
**subjunctive mood**, 121.  
**substantive**, 26 and foll.; formation of the fem., 29 and foll.; of the plural, 31 and foll.; formation of substantives, 37; derivative, 38; compound, 39; formed from adjectives, 43; from verbs, 44.  
**suffixes**, 40; diminutive, 41, 42.  
**superlative**, 68.  
**sur** (prefix), 69.  
**syllable**, 19; tonic, 24.  
**té** (suffix), 43.  
**tenses**, 122; simple, 123; compound, 129; formation of, 143 and foll.; primitive and derivative, 147; idiomatic, 148.  
**termination** (of verbs), 118.  
**trait d'union**, 23.  
**tréma**, 21.  
**u** (suffix), 71.  
**ultra** (prefix), 62.  
**uro** (suffix), 43, 44.  
**verb**, 112, auxiliary, 127, 132; active, 134; passive, 149 and foll.; neuter, 152 and foll.; reflexive, 155 and foll.; impersonal, 161; irregular, 164; defective, 165; formation of, 177 and foll.; agreement with the subject, 180 and foll.  
**vice** (prefix), 39.  
**vouloir**, page 97, note.  
**vowels**, 3 and foll.  
**y** (pronoun), 92.  
**y avoir**, page 110.  
**yer** (verbs ending in), 168.

## FRENCH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.

### A

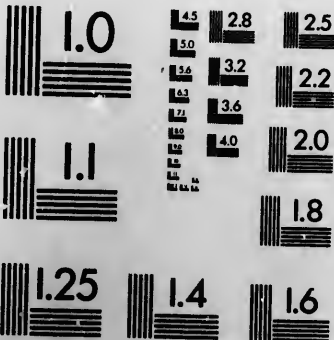
|   |   |  |
|---|---|--|
| <p><b>À</b>, <i>prep.</i>, at, to<br/> <b>a</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, avoir, (page 71)<br/> <b>abattement</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, prostration<br/> <b>abattre</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to cast down<br/> <b>abolir</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to abolish<br/> <b>abonner (s')</b> <i>v.r.</i>, to subscribe to<br/> <b>abonnement</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, subscription<br/> <b>aboucher</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to bring together<br/> <b>aboutir</b>, <i>v.n.</i>, to lead<br/> <b>abreuver</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to water<br/> <b>abreuvoir</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, horse-pond, watering-place<br/> <b>abrutir</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to make a brute of, to stultify, to besot<br/> <b>absoudre</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to absolve<br/> <b>absurde</b>, <i>adj.</i>, absurd<br/> <b>absurdité</b>, <i>s.f.</i>, absurdity<br/> <b>acajou</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, mahogany<br/> <b>accabler</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to weigh down<br/> <b>accablement</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, despondency, dejection<br/> <b>accident</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, accident<br/> <b>accompagner</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to accompany<br/> <b>accomplir</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to accomplish<br/> <b>accomplissement</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, accomplishment, fulfilment</p> | <p><b>accourir</b>, <i>v.n.</i>, to run<br/> <b>acheter</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to buy<br/> <b>acheteur</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, buyer, purchaser<br/> <b>acide</b>, <i>adj.</i>, acid<br/> <b>acidité</b>, <i>s.f.</i>, acidity<br/> <b>acier</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, steel<br/> <b>aciérie</b>, <i>s.f.</i>, steel work<br/> <b>acolyte</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, acolyte, clerk<br/> <b>acquéreur</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, buyer, purchaser<br/> <b>acquérir</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to acquire<br/> <b>acquitter (s')</b> <i>v.r.</i>, to perform<br/> <b>âcre</b>, <i>adj.</i>, acrid, sour<br/> <b>acreté</b>, <i>s.f.</i>, acridness, sourness<br/> <b>acteur</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, actor<br/> <b>actrice</b>, <i>s.f.</i>, actress<br/> <b>admirateur</b>, <i>-trice</i>, <i>s.m.f.</i>, admirer<br/> <b>admirer</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to admire<br/> <b>adorateur</b>, <i>-trice</i>, <i>s.m.f.</i>, worshipper, adorer<br/> <b>adorer</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to adore, to worship<br/> <b>adoucir</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to soften<br/> <b>adresser (s')</b> <i>v.r.</i>, to apply, to address, to speak to<br/> <b>affadir</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to make tasteless<br/> <b>affaiblir</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to weaken<br/> <b>affaire</b> <i>s.f.</i>, affair, business, difficulty<br/> <b>affaïsser</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to sink</p> | <p><b>affaissement</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, sinking<br/> <b>affermir</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to strengthen<br/> <b>Afrique</b>, <i>s.f.</i>, Africa<br/> <b>africain</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, African<br/> <b>âge</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, age<br/> <b>âgé</b>, <i>e</i>, <i>adj.</i>, old, aged<br/> <b>agencer</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to dispose<br/> <b>agencement</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, arrangement<br/> <b>agile</b>, <i>adj.</i>, nimble<br/> <b>agilité</b>, <i>s.f.</i>, nimbleness, agility<br/> <b>agir</b>, <i>v.n.</i>, to act<br/> <b>agrandir</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to enlarge<br/> <b>agrandissement</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, enlargement<br/> <b>aïeul</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, grand-father, ancestor<br/> <b>aigle</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, eagle<br/> <b>aiglon</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, eaglet<br/> <b>aigre</b>, <i>adj.</i>, sour<br/> <b>aigrelet</b>, <i>adj.</i>, sourish<br/> <b>aiguille</b>, <i>s.f.</i>, needle<br/> <b>aiguillon</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, goad<br/> <b>aïle</b>, <i>s.f.</i>, wing<br/> <b>ailé</b>, <i>e</i>, <i>adj.</i>, winged<br/> <b>aïleron</b>, <i>s.m.</i>, pinion, fin<br/> <b>aimable</b>, <i>adj.</i>, kind, amiable, gentle<br/> <b>aimant</b>, <i>aimé</i>, <i>aiment</i>.<br/> <i>l'art. pres. ; part. past ; ind. pr. of</i><br/> <b>aimer</b>, <i>v.a.</i>, to like, to love, to be fond of<br/> <b>ainsi</b>, <i>adv.</i>, thus, so</p> |
|---|---|--|





# MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)



**APPLIED IMAGE Inc**

1653 East Main Street  
Rochester, New York 14609 USA  
(716) 482 - 0300 - Phone  
(716) 288 - 5989 - Fax

|   |   |   |
|---|---|---|
| aisément, <i>adv.</i> , easily, readily           | aôit, <i>s.m.</i> , August  | archiepiscopal, <i>adj.</i> , <del>at-</del> chiepiscopal                         |
| alarmer, <i>v.a.</i> , to alarm                   | apaiser, <i>v.a.</i> , to appease, to calm, to soothe                 | archifou, <i>adj.</i> , stark mad   |
| allée, <i>s.f.</i> , path alley, going            | apercevoir, <i>v.a.</i> , to perceive, to see                         | argent, <i>s.m.</i> , silver, money   |
| aller, <i>v.n.</i> , to go                        | s'apercevoir, <i>v.r.</i> , to perceive one's self, to see each other | argenterie, <i>s.f.</i> , plate   |
| allure, <i>s.f.</i> , gait                        | s'apercevoir, <i>v.r.</i> [de], to notice, to discover                | armée, <i>s.f.</i> , army   |
| amaigrir, <i>v.a.</i> , to make thin              | aperçu, <i>s.m.</i> , glimpse   | arracher, <i>v.a.</i> , to tear   |
| amande, <i>s.f.</i> , almond                      | apôtre, <i>s.m.</i> , apostle   | arranger, <i>v.a.</i> , to put in order, to arrange                               |
| amandier, <i>s.m.</i> , almond-tree               | apostrophe, <i>s.f.</i> , apostrophe, address, reproach               | arranges, <i>s.m.</i> , arrears   |
| ambition, <i>s.f.</i> , ambition                  | apostropher, <i>v.a.</i> , to apostrophise, to address (roughly)      | arrêter, <i>v.a.</i> , to arrest  |
| amener, <i>v.a.</i> , to bring, to bring along    | appauvrir, <i>v.a.</i> , to impoverish                                | arrêt, <i>s.m.</i> , stoppage, decree   |
| Amérique, <i>s.f.</i> , America                   | appauvrissement, <i>s.m.</i> , impoverishment                         | arrière-boutique, <i>s.f.</i> , back-shop   |
| américain, <i>s.m.</i> , American                 | appeler, <i>v.a.</i> , to call  | arrière-garde, <i>s.f.</i> , rear-guard, rear                                     |
| ami, <i>s.m.</i> , friend                         | appel, <i>s.m.</i> , call   | arrière-neveu, <i>s.m.</i> , grand-nephew   |
| amiuer, <i>v.a.</i> , to make thin                | applaudir, <i>v.a.</i> , to applaud                                   | arrière-pensée, <i>s.f.</i> , mental reservation                                  |
| amiral, <i>s.m.</i> , admiral                     | applaudissement, <i>s.m.</i> , applause                               | arrière-saison, <i>s.f.</i> , latter end of the season, autumn, decline (of life) |
| amollir, <i>v.a.</i> , to soften                  | appliquer, (s'), <i>v.r.</i> , to apply one's self                    | arrivée, <i>s.f.</i> , arrival  |
| amollissement, <i>s.m.</i> , softening            | apporter, <i>v.a.</i> , to bring                                      | arriver, <i>v.n.</i> , to arrive  |
| amuser, <i>v.a.</i> , to amuse                    | âpre, <i>adj.</i> , rough, sour, eager                                | arroser, <i>v.a.</i> , to water   |
| amuser (s') <i>v.r.</i> , to amuse one's self     | âpreté, <i>s.f.</i> , roughness, tartness, eagerness                  | arsenal, <i>s.m.</i> , arsenal  |
| amusement, <i>s.m.</i> , amusement                | après, <i>prep.</i> , after   | art, <i>s.m.</i> , art  |
| analyse, <i>s.f.</i> , analysis, parsing, outline | après-coup, <i>loc. adv.</i> , when too late, afterwards              | artiste, <i>s.m.</i> , artist   |
| ancien, -ne, <i>adj.</i> , ancient                | après-demain, <i>loc. adv.</i> , the day after to-morrow              | aspect, <i>s.m.</i> , aspect  |
| ancienneté, <i>s.f.</i> , antiquity, seniority    | après-dîner, <i>s.m.</i> , after dinner, evening                      | assassin, <i>s.m.</i> , murderer  |
| ancre, <i>s.f.</i> , anchor                       | après-midi, <i>s.f.</i> , afternoon                                   | assassinat, <i>s.m.</i> , assassination   |
| ancre, <i>s.m.</i> , anchorage                    | arc, <i>s.m.</i> , arc  | asseoir (s'), <i>v.r.</i> , to sit down   |
| âne, <i>s.m.</i> , ass                            | arcade, <i>s.f.</i> , arcade  | asservir, <i>v.a.</i> , to enslave, to subdue                                     |
| ânon, <i>s.m.</i> , young ass                     | archidiaconal, <i>adj.</i> , archidiaconal                            | assiéger, <i>v.a.</i> , to besiege  |
| anglais, <i>s.m.</i> , Englishman, Briton         | archiducal, <i>adj.</i> , archiducal                                  | assiégéant, <i>s.m.</i> , besieger  |
| annexion, <i>s.f.</i> , annexion                  |   | assiette, <i>s.f.</i> , plate   |
| antifebrile, <i>adj.</i> , antifebrile            |   | assiette, <i>s.f.</i> , plateful  |
| anti-monarchique, <i>adj.</i> , anti-monarchical  |   | assistance, <i>s.f.</i> , assistance  |
| anti-religieux, <i>adj.</i> , anti-religious      |   | assistant, <i>s.m.</i> , assistant, bystander                                     |
| antisocial, <i>adj.</i> anti-social               |   | assister, <i>v.a.n.</i> , to assist, to be present                                |
|   |   | assortir, <i>v.a.</i> , to match, to sort, to suit                                |

atabler, v.a., to sit at  
 table  
 attaquer, v.a., to attack  
 attendre, v.a., to wait  
 for, to expect  
 s'attendre, v.r., to expect  
 attendu, prep., consider-  
 ing  
 attendrir, v.a., to soften,  
 to move  
 attentif, *adj.*, attentive  
 attention, *s.f.*, attention  
 attirail, *s.m.*, imple-  
 ments, apparatus, train  
 attitude, *s.f.*, attitude  
 aubade, *s.f.*, morning  
 serenade  
 aube, *s.f.*, dawn  
 auberge, *s.f.*, inn  
 aubergiste, *s.m.*, inn-  
 keeper  
 aucun, *adv.*, any, no, none  
 aujourd'hui, *adv.*, to-day  
 autre, *adj.* and *pr. ind.*,  
 other  
 autrui, *pr. ind.*, others,  
 our neighbour  
 Auvergne, *s.f.*, Auvergne  
 auvergnat, *s.m.*, native  
 of Auvergne  
 avancé, -e, *adj.*, ad-  
 vanced, forward, clear  
 avancer, v.a.n., to ad-  
 vance  
 avant, *prep.*, before  
 avantage, *s.m.*, advantage  
 avant-coureur, *s.m.*, fore-  
 runner  
 avant-goût, *s.m.*, foretaste  
 avant-poste, *s.m.*, outpost  
 avant-propos, *s.m.*, pre-  
 face  
 avertir, v.a., to warn  
 avide, *adj.*, greedily  
 avidité, *s.f.*, greediness  
 avis, *s.m.*, advice, opinion  
 avoine, *s.f.*, oats  
 avoir, v.aux. and act., to  
 have  
 avoir, *s.m.*, property

## B

Bagatelle, *s.f.*, trifle  
 baigner (se), v.a., to  
 bathe  
 baigneur, -euse, *s.m.f.*,  
 bather  
 bail, *s.m.*, lease  
 bailler, v.n., to yawn  
 baillement, *s.m.*, yawning  
 baillon, *s.m.*, gag  
 bal, *s.m.*, ball (dancing)  
 balancer, v.a., to balance  
 balançoire, *s.f.*, swing,  
 see-saw  
 balayer, v.a., to sweep  
 balle, *s.f.*, ball  
 ballon, *s.m.*, balloon  
 ballot, *s.m.*, package  
 balustrade, *s.f.*, railing  
 balustre, *s.f.*, railing  
 bambou, *s.m.*, bamboo  
 banal, *adj.*, trite  
 banalité, *s.f.*, common-  
 place saying  
 bandage, *s.m.*, bandage  
 bande, *s.f.*, band  
 bandelette, *s.f.*, bandlet  
 bannir, v.a., to banish, to  
 exile  
 barbare, *adj.*, barbarous,  
 barbarian  
 barbarie, *s.f.*, barbarity,  
 rudeness  
 barbe, *s.f.*, beard  
 barbier, *s.m.*, barber  
 barbouiller, v.a., to be-  
 smear  
 barbu, -e, *adj.*, bearded  
 barbue, *s.f.*, brill  
 barre, *s.f.*, bar, cross-bar  
 barreau, *s.m.*, (small bar,  
 grating  
 bas, *s.m.*, stocking  
 bassiner, v.a., to warm  
 bât, *s.m.*, pack-saddle  
 bûte, -e, *adj.*, puck sad-  
 dled; un âne bûté, a  
 downright ass  
 bataille, *s.f.*, battle  
 bateau, *s.m.*, boat  
 batelier, *s.m.*, boatman  
 battant, -e, *adj.*, porte  
 battante, slamming  
 door  
 battre, v.a., to beat  
 bavard, *adj.*, talkative  
 baver, v.n., to slobber  
 beau, bel (*m.*), belle (*f.*),  
*adj.*, beautiful, hand-  
 some, fine  
 beaucoup, *adv.*, much  
 beauté, *s.f.*, beauty  
 bellâtre, *adj.*, of insipid  
 beauty  
 bénir, v.a., to bless  
 berger, *s.m.*, shepherd  
 bergerie, *s.f.*, fold  
 Berlin, *n.p.*, Berlin  
 beurre, *s.m.*, butter  
 bible, *s.f.*, bible  
 bibliothèque, *s.f.*, library,  
 book-case  
 bien, *adv.*, very,  
 much, really  
 bien, *s.m.*, good, proper-  
 ty, wealth  
 bien-aimé, *adj.*, well-  
 beloved, dearest  
 bienfaisant, *adj.*, bene-  
 ficent  
 bienfaiteur, -rice, *s.m.f.*,  
 benefactor (*m.*), bene-  
 factress (*f.*)  
 bienheureux, -se, *adj.*,  
 blessed  
 bijou, -x, *s.m.*, jewel  
 bijouterie, *s.f.*, jewellery  
 bille, *s.f.*, ball  
 billard, *s.m.*, billiards  
 billet, *s.m.*, block, clog  
 billet, *s.m.*, ticket; billet  
 de banque, bank-note  
 bisaieul, *s.m.*, great-  
 grandfather  
 bissac, *s.m.*, wallet  
 blâmer, v.a., to blame  
 blanc, -che, *adj.*, white  
 blanchir, v.a., to whiten

blanchisseur, *s.m.*,  
bleacher  
blé, *s.m.*, corn, wheat  
blesser, *v.a.*, to wound  
bles sure, *s.f.*, wound  
bleu, *adj.*, blue  
blenir, *v.n.*, to become  
blue  
bocal, *s.m.*, glass jar,  
glass globe  
boire, *v.a.*, to drink  
boire, *s.m.*, drink, drink-  
ing  
bois, *s.m.*, wood  
boiserie, *s.f.*, wainscot  
boiteux, -se, *adj.*, lame,  
crippled  
bombarde, *s.f.*, bombard  
bombe, *s.f.*, bomb  
bon, *adj.*, good, kind;  
les bons, the good  
boird, *s.m.*, edgo  
bordage, *s.m.*, planking  
border, *v.a.*, to hem  
bordure, *s.f.*, edging,  
border, frame  
bosse, *s.f.*, lump, hunch  
bossu, -e, *adj.*, lump-  
backed, hunch-backed  
botte, *s.f.*, boot  
bottier, *s.m.*, bootmaker  
bouche, *s.f.*, mouth  
bouchée, *s.f.*, mouthful  
boucher, *s.m.*, butcher;  
bonchérie, butcher's  
shop  
boucher, *v.a.*, to stop  
bouchon, *s.m.*, cork  
boucle, *s.f.*, buckle, tie,  
ring  
bouffée, *s.f.*, puff  
bouffir, *v.n.*, to swell  
bouffir, *v.n.*, to swell out  
bouffissure, *s.f.*, swelling,  
bombast  
bouillir, *v.n.*, to boil,  
*page 114*  
boulangier, *s.m.*, baker  
boulangerie, *s.f.*, bakery  
boule, *s.f.*, ball

boulet, *s.m.*, cannon ball  
boulette, *s.f.*, ball (of  
bread or paper)  
bourg, *s.m.*, borough,  
market-town  
bourgade, *s.f.*, small mar-  
ket-town, village  
bourrade, *s.f.*, blow (with  
the but end of a  
musket)  
bourre, *s.f.*, flock, wad  
bourse, *s.f.*, purse  
boursier, *s.m.*, bursar,  
treasurer, stock-jobber  
bouteille, *s.f.*, bottle  
boutique, *s.f.*, shop  
bracelet, *s.m.*, bracelet  
branchage, *s.m.*, branches,  
boughs  
branche, *s.f.*, branch  
branchu, -e, *adj.*, branch-  
ed, branchy  
bras, *s.m.*, arm  
brigand, *s.m.*, brigand  
brigandage, *s.m.*, bri-  
gandage  
broche, *s.f.*, brooch  
brochette, *s.f.*, skewer  
broder, *v.a.*, to embroider  
brouillard, *adj.*, for blot-  
ting; papier-bouillard,  
blotting-paper  
brouiller, *v.a.*, to mix  
together, to upset  
bronillon, *s.m.*, rough  
draff, blunderer  
bruit, *s.m.*, noise, fame,  
rumour  
brume, *s.f.*, mist, fog  
bruto, *s.f.*, brute  
brute, *adj.*, brutish  
bruyant, *adj.*, noisy; *see*  
bruire, *p. 125*  
bûche, *s.f.*, log of wood  
bûcher, *s.m.*, log-house,  
stake  
bûcheron, *s.m.*, woodcut-  
ter  
bûchette, *s.f.*, small log  
of wood

bureau, *s.m.*, office  
but, *s.m.*, aim, end

## C

cache, *s.f.*, hiding place  
cachette, *s.f.*, hiding  
place  
cabine, *s.f.*, cabin  
cabinet, *s.m.*, cabinet,  
closet, study  
caehcter, *v.a.*, to seal  
cahier, *s.m.*, copy-book  
caillou, *s.m.*, flint, pebble  
caisse, *s.f.*, case  
caisson, *s.m.*, waggon  
camail, *s.m.*, camail  
camp, *s.m.*, camp  
campagne, *s.f.*, country  
campagnard, *s.m.*, coun-  
tryman  
canal, *s.m.*, canal, channel  
canard, *s.m.*, duck  
cane, *s.f.*, cane, stick  
cannelle, *s.f.*, cinnamon  
capital, *s.m.*, main point,  
capital, stock  
capitaliste, *s.m.*, capitalist  
car, *conj.*, for  
caractère, *s.m.*, charac-  
ter, temper  
carafe, *s.f.*, flaggon  
carafon, *s.m.*, decanter  
cardinal, *s.m.*, cardinal  
cardinalat, *s.m.*, cardina-  
late  
carnaval, *s.m.*, carnival  
carpe, *s.f.*, carp  
carpillon, *s.m.*, little carp  
carrosse, *s.m.*, carriage  
carrossier, *s.m.*, carriage-  
or coachmaker  
cascade, *s.f.*, cascade,  
waterfall, fall  
cause, *s.f.*, cause  
cave, *s.f.*, cellar, win  
vault  
caveau, *s.m.*, cellar,  
burial vault

ce, cot, *m.*, cette, *f.*, ces, *pl.*, *adj. dem.*, this, these, that, those  
 ce, c', *pr. dem.* 1, he, she, they; 2, it; 3, *expletive*, ce qui, ce que, what  
 cela, *pr. dem.*, that  
 celui, (*m.*), celle, (*f.*), ceux, celles, *pl.* *Pr. dem. subj.*, he, she, one; *pl.*, they or those; *obj.*, him, her, the one; *pl.*, those  
 celui-ci, (*m.*), celle-ci, (*f.*), ceux-ci, celles-ci, (*m.f. pl.*) *pr. dem.*, (see page 58)  
 celui-là, (*m.*), celle-là, (*f.*), ceux-là, celles-là, (*m.f. pl.*) *pr. dem.*, (see page 58)  
 ceinture, *s.f.*, girdle  
 ceinturon, *s.m.*, belt  
 céleste, *adj.*, heavenly, celestial  
 cendre, *s.f.*, ashes  
 ceudrier, *s.m.*, fender  
 cent, *adj. num.*, hundred  
 centaine, *s.f.*, about a hundred  
 cerise, *s.f.*, cherry  
 cerisier, *s.m.*, cherry-tree  
 certain, -e, *adj.*, sure, certain; (*ind.*) one, some  
 cerveau, *s.m.*, cerebrum  
 cervelas, *s.m.*, saveloy  
 chacal, *s.m.*, jackal  
 chagrin, *s.m.*, sorrow  
 chaîne, *s.f.*, chain  
 chaînette, *s.f.*, little chain  
 chaise, *s.f.*, chair, seat  
 chalour, *s.f.*, heat  
 chambre, *s.f.*, room  
 champ, *s.m.*, field  
 chandelle, *s.f.*, candle

change, *s.m.*, exchange, change; lettre de change, bill of exchange  
 chanoine, *s.m.*, canon, prebendary  
 chanoinesse, *s.f.*, canoness  
 chant, *s.m.*, song, singing  
 chanter, *v.a.n.*, to sing  
 chanteur, -euse, *s.m.f.*, singer; cantatrice, a professional singer  
 chantonner, *v.n.*, to hum  
 chape, *s.f.*, cope  
 chapeau, *s.m.*, hat  
 chaperon, *s.m.*, hood, chaperon  
 chaque, *adj. ind.*, each  
 charger, *v.a.*, to load  
 charitable, *adj.*, charitable  
 Charles, *s.m.*, Charles  
 Charlot, *s.m.*, Charlie  
 charmant, *adj.*, charming, delightful  
 charrue, *s.f.*, plough  
 chasse, *s.f.*, hunting, sporting  
 chasse, *s.f.*, shrine  
 chasseur, *s.m.*, hunter, sportsman  
 châtaigne, *s.f.*, chestnut  
 châtaignier, *s.m.*, chestnut-tree  
 châtelain, -e, *adj.*; le seigneur châtelain, the lord of the manor; la dame châtelaine, the lady of the manor; chaîne châtelaine, or châtelaine, chain  
 châtelet, *s.m.*, little castle  
 chaumière, *s.f.*, cottage  
 chausser, *v.a.*, to shoe  
 chaussure, *s.f.*, boots, shoes  
 chemin, *s.m.*, way, road  
 chemise, *s.f.*, shirt  
 cher, *adj.*, dear, (*adv.*) dear, dearly

cheval, *s.m.*, horse  
 chevalier, *s.m.*, knight  
 chevelure, *s.f.*, hair  
 chèvre, *s.f.*, goat  
 chevreau, *s.m.*, kid  
 chez, *prep.*, at or to the house of; allons chez moi, chez nous, let us go home  
 chien, *s.m.*, dog  
 chimère, *s.f.*, idle dream  
 chimie, *s.f.*, chemistry  
 chimiste, *s.m.*, chemist  
 chômer, *v.n.*, to be without work  
 chômage, *s.m.*, want of work, rest  
 cœur, *s.m.*, chorus, choir  
 choisir, *v.a.*, to choose, to select  
 chose, *s.f.*, thing  
 chrétien, -ne, *adj.*, christian  
 chrétienté, *s.f.*, christendom  
 chute, *s.f.*, fall  
 ci, *adv.*, here; ci-gît, here lies  
 cible, *s.f.*, target  
 cinquante, *adj. num.*, fifty  
 cinquanteaine, *s.f.*, about fifty  
 circonstance, *s.f.*, circumstance  
 citoyen, *s.m.*, citizen  
 citron, *s.m.*, citron, lemon  
 citronnelle, *s.f.*, balm  
 clairement, *adv.*, clearly  
 cligner, *v.a.*, to half close (the eyes)  
 clignoter, *v.n.*, to wink (repeatedly)  
 cliqueter, *v.n.*, to clack  
 cliquetis, *s.m.*, din, clang  
 cloche, *s.f.*, bell  
 clocher, *s.m.*, bell-tower, steeple  
 cœur, *s.m.*, heart  
 coffre, *s.m.*, coffer  
 coffret, *s.m.*, little coffer

- colère, *s.f.*, anger  
 colombe, *s.f.*, dove  
 colombier, *s.m.*, dove-cot  
 colonel, *s.m.*, colonel  
 colonnade, *s.f.*, colonnade  
 colonne, *s.f.*, column  
 colorer, *v.a.*, to colour  
 coloris, *s.m.*, colouring  
 combattre, *v.a.*, to combat  
 combattant, *s.m.*, combatant  
 combinaison, *s.f.*, combination  
 combiner, *v.a.*, to combine  
 comédien, *s.m.*, comedian, actor  
 commander, *v.a.n.*, to command  
 commandant, *s.m.*, commander  
 comme, *adv.*, how  
 comme, *conj.*, as  
 comment, *adv.*, how  
 commercer, *v.n.*, to trade  
 commercant, *s.m.*, trader  
 compagnie, *s.f.*, company, society  
 comparable, *adj.*, comparable  
 comparaison, *s.f.*, comparison  
 comparer, *v.a.*, to compare  
 compatir, *v.n.*, to sympathise (with)  
 complet, -ète, *adj.*, complete  
 compliment, *s.m.*, compliment, congratulation  
 complot, *s.m.*, plot  
 composer (se), *v.r.*, to be composed  
 comprendre, *v.a.*, to understand, to comprehend  
 compromettre (se), *v.r.*, to compromise one's self  
 compte, *s.m.*, account  
 compter, *v.a.*, to reckon  
 compteur, *s.m.*, meter (gas)  
 Comte, *s.m.*, Count, Earl  
 comté, *s.m.*, earldom, county  
 Comtesse, *s.f.*, Countess  
 concert, *s.m.*, concert  
 concevoir, *v.a.*, to conceive  
 concourir, *v.n.*, (à), to concur (in); concourir pour, to compete for  
 condamner, *v.a.*, to condemn  
 condescendre, *v.n.*, to condescend  
 conducteur, -trice, *s.m.f.*, conductor, guide, driver  
 conduire, *v.a.*, to lead  
 conduite, *s.f.*, conduct, behaviour  
 confiance, *s.f.*, confidence, trust  
 confier, *v.a.*, to entrust  
 confondre, *v.a.*, to confound; se confondre, to be blended; se confondre en excuses, to be lost in apologies  
 conjugaison, *s.f.*, conjugation  
 conjuguer, *v.a.*, to conjugate  
 connaître, *v.a.*, to know  
 conquérant, *s.m.*, conqueror  
 conquérir, *v.a.*, to conquer  
 conscience, *s.f.*, conscience  
 sentir, *v.n.*, to consent  
 conséquence, *s.f.*, consequence  
 consoler, *v.a.*, to console  
 consul, *s.m.*, consul  
 consulat, *s.m.*, consulate  
 contenir, *v.a.*, to contain  
 contenter, *v.a.*, to content  
 contenu, *s.m.*, contents  
 continuuel, -le, *adj.*, continual  
 contre, *prep.*, against  
 contre-amiral, *s.m.*, rear admiral  
 contre-coup, *s.m.*, rebound, consequence  
 contre-maitre, *s.m.*, foreman  
 contre-marque, *s.f.*, countermark, check  
 contre-sens, *s.m.*, mistranslation  
 contrecarrer, *v.a.*, to thwart  
 contredire, *v.a.*, to contradict  
 contrefaire, *v.a.*, to imitate  
 convenance, *s.f.*, fitness, (*pl.*), propriety; manquer aux convenances, to be guilty of impropriety  
 convenir, *v.n.*, to agree to, to fit  
 convoi, *s.m.*, funeral, convoy, train  
 copie, *s.f.*, copy  
 copiste, *s.m.*, copyist  
 coquet, -te, *adj.*, coquettish, elegant  
 coquetterie, *s.f.*, coquetry, flirtation  
 coquillage, *s.m.*, shell-fish  
 coquille, *s.f.*, shell  
 corail, *s.m.*, coral  
 cordage, *s.m.*, cordage, rope  
 corde, *s.f.*, cord  
 cordeau, *s.m.*, cord  
 corder, *v.a.*, to cord  
 corderie, *s.f.*, rope-making  
 cordier, *s.m.*, rope-maker  
 cordon, *s.m.*, string  
 correctement, *adv.*, correctly

éfile, *s.f.*, rib, cost  
 côtelette, *s.f.*, outlet, chop  
 cotte, *s.f.*, petticoat  
 cotillon, *s.m.*, under-  
 petticoat  
 couleur, *s.f.*, colour  
 coupable, *adj.*, guilty  
 couple, *s.m.*, couple  
 couplet, *s.m.*, verse (of a  
 song)  
 coup, *s.m.*, blow, stroke,  
 knock; tout-à-coup,  
 all at once  
 couper, *v.a.*, to cut  
 coupon, *s.m.*, coupon  
 coupure, *s.f.*, cut  
 courage, *s.m.*, courage  
 courageux, -se, *adj.*,  
 courageous  
 coureur, *s.m.*, runner  
 court, *adj.*, short  
 cousin, *s.m.*, cousin  
 coussin, *s.m.*, cushion  
 coussinet, *s.m.*, little  
 cushion  
 couteau, *s.m.*, knife  
 coutelier, *s.m.*, cutler  
 couvée, *s.f.*, brood  
 couver, *v.a.*, to hatch  
 cracher, *v.n.*, to spit  
 crachoir, *s.m.*, spittoon  
 craigneux, *v.a.*, (*see* crain-  
 dre, p. 127)  
 craindre, *v.a.*, to fear  
 crainte, *s.f.*, fear  
 cravate, *s.f.*, cravat,  
 necktie  
 crayon, *s.m.*, pencil  
 crédule, *adj.*, credulous  
 crédulité, *s.f.*, credulity  
 cri, *s.m.*, cry  
 crier, *v.n.*, to cry  
 cristal, *s.m.*, crystal  
 critiquer, *v.a.*, to criticise  
 croc, *s.m.*, hook  
 crochet, *s.m.*, little hook  
 croire, *v.a.n.*, to believe  
 crois, -croit, *ind. pres.* of  
 croire  
 croisée, *s.f.*, window

croître, *v.n.*, to grow  
 croix, *s.f.*, cross; croisil-  
 lon, cross-bar  
 croquer, *v.a.*, to crunch,  
 to sketch  
 croquis, *s.m.*, sketch  
 croûte *s.f.*, crust  
 croyance, *s.f.*, belief  
 croyant, *v.a.*, *p.pr.* of  
 croire  
 croyant, *s.m.*, believer  
 croyez, *imp.* of croire  
 cru, *v.*, *p.past* of croire  
 cru, *adj.*, raw, crude  
 crû, *v.*, *p.past* of croître  
 crû, *s.m.*, growth, growing  
 cruauté, *s.f.*, cruelty  
 cruel, -le, *adj.*, cruel, un-  
 kind  
 cueillir, *v.a.*, to gather,  
 to pluck  
 cuiller, *s.f.*, spoon  
 cuillerée, *s.f.*, spoonful  
 cuir, *s.m.*, leather  
 cuisine, *s.f.*, kitchen  
 cuisinier, *s.m.*, cook  
 cyprès, *s.m.*, cypress

## D

danger, *s.m.*, danger  
 dans, *prep.*, in, into  
 danser, *v.a.n.*, to dance  
 danseur, -se, *s.m.f.*, dancer  
 dame, *s.f.*, lady  
 dame, *int.*, indeed, well  
 de, *prep.*, of  
 de, *art.*, *def.* or *part.*  
 (instead of du, de la,  
 des), some, any  
 déclinaison, *s.f.*, declen-  
 sion  
 décliner, *v.a.*, to decline  
 déballe, *v.a.*, to unpack  
 débat, *s.m.*, debate  
 débattre, *v.a.*, to discuss  
 débitant, *s.m.*, retailer  
 débiter, *v.a.*, to retail  
 débrouiller, *v.a.*, to un-  
 ravel

début, *s.m.*, beginning  
 débiter, *v.n.*, to begin  
 décaçhet, *v.a.*, to open  
 (a letter)  
 décevoir, *v.a.*, to deceive  
 décider, *v.a.*, to decide  
 se décider, *v.r.*, to come  
 to a decision, to make  
 up one's mind  
 déclarer, *v.a.*, to declare  
 défailir, *v.n.*, to fall, to  
 decay, to faint  
 défaire, *v.a.*, to undo, to  
 defeat, to rout  
 défaut, *s.m.*, defect, fault  
 défendre, *v.a.*, to forbid,  
 to defend  
 défendeur, *s.m.*, -eresse,  
*s.f.*, defendant  
 défiant, *adj.*, distrustful  
 définir, *v.a.*, to define  
 dégât, *s.m.*, damage,  
 waste  
 dégrader (se), *v.r.*, to  
 degrade or disgrace  
 one's self  
 déjeuner, *v.n.* to break-  
 fast  
 déjeuner, *s.m.*, breakfast  
 délateur, *s.m.*, délatrice,  
*f.*, informer  
 délicieux, -se, *adj.*, deli-  
 cious  
 délivrance, *s.f.*, deliver-  
 ance  
 délivrer, *v.a.*, to deliver  
 démarche, *s.f.*, step, pro-  
 ceeding  
 demain, *adv.*, to-morrow  
 demande, *s.f.*, request,  
 question  
 demander, *v.a.*, to ask  
 demeure, *s.f.*, abode,  
 dwelling  
 demeurer, *v.n.*, to live,  
 to remain, to stay  
 demi-fermé, *adj.*, half-  
 closed, partly closed  
 demi-fin, *adj.*, half-fine  
 demi-mort, *adj.*, half-dead



- demi-nu, *adj.*, half-naked  
 démôlir, *v. a.*, to demolish,  
 to pull down  
 dent, *s. f.*, tooth  
 dentelle, *s. f.*, lace  
 dentier, *s. m.*, set of teeth  
 dentiste, *s. m.*, dentist  
 dénûé, -e, *adj.*, destitute,  
 devoid  
 dépêcher (se), *v. r.*, to  
 hasten  
 dépendance, *s. f.*, depen-  
 dence  
 dépendre, *v. n.*, to depend  
 dépens, *s. m. pl.*, expense,  
 cost, charge; à mes  
 dépens, at my expense  
 dépenser, *v. a.*, to spend  
 déplaire, *v. n.*, to dis-  
 please  
 déranger, *v. a.*, to disturb  
 des, *art. pl.*, of the, of;  
 from tho, from; some,  
 any  
 désir, *s. m.*, desire, wish  
 désirer, *v. a.*, to desire, to  
 wish for  
 désobéir, *v. n.*, to disobey  
 desseïn, *s. m.*, design,  
 project  
 dessin, *s. m.*, drawing  
 détail, *s. m.*, detail, *pl.*  
 details, particulars  
 détourner (se), to go out of  
 one's way, to turn away  
 détromper, *v. a.*, to un-  
 deceive  
 détruire, *v. a.*, to destroy  
 deuil, *s. m.*, mourning  
 deux, *adj. card.*, two  
 dévoiler, *v. a.*, to reveal  
 devoir, *v. a.*, to owe  
 devoir, *s. m.*, duty  
 diable, *s. m.*, devil  
 diaconal, -e, *adj.*, diaconal  
 dictionnaire, *s. m.*, dic-  
 tionary  
 Dieu, *s. m.*, God  
 différent, *adj.*, different,  
 various
- différer, *v. a.*, to defer, to  
 postpone  
 dimanche, *s. m.*, Sunday  
 dinde, *s. f.*, turkey-hen  
 dindon, *s. m.*, turkey  
 diner, *v. n.*, to dine  
 diner, *s. m.*, dinner  
 diocèse, *s. m.*, diocese  
 diocésain, *s. m.*, diocesan  
 dire, *v. a.*, to say  
 dire, *s. m.*, saying, state-  
 ment  
 disent, dit, dites, *v. a.*,  
 (from dire p. 128)  
 directeur, *s. m.*, director,  
 manager  
 directrice, *s. f.*, directrix  
 discret, -ète, *adj.*, discreet  
 discrétion, *s. f.*, discretion  
 discuter, *v. a.*, to discuss  
 disparaître, *v. n.*, to dis-  
 appear  
 diviser, *v. a.*, to divide  
 diviseur, *s. m.*, divisor  
 dix, *adj. n.*, ten  
 dizaine, *s. f.*, about ten  
 docile, *adj.*, docile  
 docilité, *s. f.*, docility  
 doigt, *s. m.*, finger  
 doigté, *s. m.*, fingering  
 domestique, *s. m. f.*, man-  
 servant; woman ser-  
 vant  
 donner, *v. a.*, to give;  
 donner la parole, to  
 give leave to speak  
 dont, *pr. relat.* (par. 103  
 to 106)  
 dorénavant, *adv.*, hence-  
 forth  
 dormir, to sleep  
 douane, *s. f.*, custom-  
 house  
 douanier, *s. m.*, custom-  
 house officer  
 douceâtre, *adj.*, sweetish,  
 insipidly sweet  
 doux, -ce, *adj.*, sweet,  
 fresh, soft, mild  
 douze *adj. num.*, twelve
- douzaine, *s. f.*, about  
 twelve, or a dozen  
 droit, *adj.*, straight, right  
 drôle, *adj.*, droll, funny  
 drôlerie, *s. f.*, drollery  
 du (instead of de le) of  
 the, of; from the, from  
 some, any  
 dû, *s. m.*, duo  
 ducal, *adj.*, ducal  
 dur, *adj.*, hard  
 dureté, *s. f.*, hardness

## E

- Eau, *s. f.*, water  
 ébarber, *v. a.*, to strip  
 (quills)  
 ébène, *s. f.*, ebony  
 ébénier, *s. m.*, ebony-tree  
 ébéniste, *s. m.*, cabinet-  
 maker  
 ébénisterie, *s. f.*, cabinet-  
 making  
 éblouir, *v. a.*, to dazzle  
 échafaud, *s. m.*, scaffold  
 échafaudage, *s. m.*, scaf-  
 folding  
 échappée, *s. f.*, vista,  
 prauk  
 échapper, *v. n.*, to escape  
 échoir, *v. n.*, to fall, to  
 befall, to fall due  
 éclaircir, *v. a.*, to en-  
 lighten  
 éclaircissement, *s. m.*, ex-  
 planation  
 école, *s. f.*, school  
 écolier, *s. m.*, school-boy  
 économat, *s. m.*, steward-  
 ship  
 économe, *adj.*, thrifty,  
 saving  
 économe, *s. m.*, steward  
 écrire, *v. a.*, to write  
 écrit, *s. m.*, writing  
 écrivain, *s. m.*, bill, board  
 écrivain, *s. m.*, writer  
 écrivassier, *s. m.*, scribbler

- écueil, s.m.*, rock, reef  
*écuelle, s.f.*, bowl  
*écureuil, s.m.*, squirrel  
*édenté, adj.*, toothless  
*édifice, s.m.*, edifice  
*effacer, v.a.*, to efface  
*effet, s.m.*, effect  
*égal, adj.*, equal  
*égarer (s'), v.r.*, to lose one's self, to go astray  
*église, s.f.*, church  
*élargir, v.a.*, to enlarge, to widen  
*élargisseur, s.f.*, piece put in to widen  
*élégant, adj.*, elegant  
*élève, s.2g.*, pupil  
*élever, v.a.*, to raise  
*élire, v.a.*, to elect  
*élu, s.m.*, elect  
*émail, s.m.*, enamel  
*emballer, v.a.*, to pack up  
*embarras, s.m.*, embarrassment, trouble  
*emboucher, v.a.*, to put (a wind instrument) to one's mouth  
*embouchure, s.f.*, mouth of a river  
*embrassade, s.f.*, embrace  
*embrasser, v.a.*, to embrace  
*émigrant, s.m.*, emigrant  
*émigrer, v.n.*, to emigrate  
*émonvoir, v.a.*, to move  
*empreser (s'), v.r.*, to hasten  
*en, prep.*, in, into  
*en, adv.*, from thence  
*en, pr.pers.* (page 56)  
*enchanteur, s.m.*, enchanter  
*enchanteresse, s.f.*, enchantress  
*enchérir, v.a.*, to raise (prices)  
*enchérisseur, s.m.*, bidder  
*encore, adv.*, still, yet  
*aguin*  
*encrer, s.f.*, ink  
*encrier, s.m.*, inkstand  
*endenté, adj.*, with teeth  
*énergique, adj.*, energetic  
*enfant, s.m.*, infant, baby, child  
*enfantin, adj.*, childish  
*enfiler, v.a.*, to thread  
*enfilade, s.f.*, suite of rooms, long string  
*enjamber, v.a.*, to stride  
*enjambée, s.f.*, stride  
*enjoindre, v.a.*, to enjoin, to direct  
*ennemi, s.m.*, enemy, foe  
*ennui, s.m.*, wearisomeness, care  
*énoncer, v.a.*, to express; *s'énoncer, to express*  
*one's-self, to be expressed*  
*enorgueillir (s'), v.r.*, to boast  
*enquérir (s'), to inquire, to ask*  
*enrhumer (s'), to catch a cold*  
*enrichir, v.a.*, to enrich  
*entabler, v.a.*, to entable  
*entablement, s.m.*, entablature  
*entendre, v.a.n.*, to hear, to understand  
*entêté, adj.*, obstinate  
*entre-côte, s.m.*, meat between the ribs  
*entrelarder, v.a.*, to interlard  
*entremets, s.m.*, side-dish  
*entremette, v.a.*, to interpose  
*entrepont, s.m.*, between the decks  
*entreprendre, v.a.*, to undertake  
*entreprise, s.f.*, enterprising, undertaking  
*entrée, s.f.*, entrance  
*entrer, v.n.*, to enter  
*entresol, s.m.*, mezzanine  
*envahir, v.a.*, to invade  
*envers, pr.*, towards, to  
*envis (à l'), adv.*, in emulation of each other,  
*vying with each other*  
*envie, s.f.*, envy, wish, longing  
*envoyer, v.a.*, to send  
*épais, -se, adj.*, thick  
*épanchement, s.m.*, discharge, overflow, (fig.) overflow, outburst  
*épancher, v.a.*, to pour out, (fig.) to vent, to discharge  
*épée, s.f.*, sword  
*épiscopal, adj.*, episcopal  
*épître, s.f.*, epistle  
*équestre, adj.*, equestrian  
*équivalent, v.n.*, to be equivalent, to be tantamount  
*érite, s.m.*, hermit  
*ermitage, s.m.*, hermitage  
*erreur, s.f.*, error, mistake  
*esclavage, s.m.*, slavery  
*esclave, s.m.f.*, slave  
*espérance, s.f.*, hope  
*espiègle, adj.*, frolicsome  
*espièglerie, s.f.*, frolic  
*esprit, s.m.*, wit; avoir de l'esprit, to be witty  
*esquiver (s'), v.r.*, to steal away  
*essentiel, -le, adj.*, essential  
*estime, s.m.*, esteem  
*estimer, v.a.*, to esteem  
*établir, v.a.*, to establish  
*établissement, s.m.*, establishment  
*été, s.m.*, summer  
*éteindre, v.a.*, to extinguish, to put out

étendre, *v.c.*, to extend  
 étendue, *s.f.*, extent  
 étoile, *s.f.*, star  
 étranger, -ère, *adj.*, foreign  
 étroit, *adj.*, narrow, light  
 européen, *adj.*, European  
 éventail, *s.m.*, fan  
 éviter, *v.a.*, to avoid  
 excellent, *adj.*, excellent  
 excès, *s.m.*, excess, abuse  
 excuse, *s.f.*, excuse, apology  
 exemple, *s.m.*, example  
 exhaler, *v.a.*, to exhale, to emit  
 exigeant, *adj.*, particular, unreasonable  
 exiger, *v.a.*, to exact, to require  
 exigü, -üe, *adj.*, small, slender, slight  
 expédient, *adj.*, expedient, advisable  
 expédient, *s.m.*, expedient, device  
 expédient, *v.a.*, from expédier, to dispatch  
 exposer, *v.a.*, to expose  
 exprès, *s.m.*, express, courier  
 exprès, -esse, *adj.*, express  
 exprès, *adv.*, purposely  
 expressément, *adv.*, expressly  
 externat, *s.m.*, day-school  
 externe, *s.m.*, day-pupil

## F

Façade, *s.f.*, front (of a building)  
 face, *s.f.*, face  
 facette, *s.f.*, facet  
 fâcher (se) *v.r.*, to get angry  
 facile, *adj.*, easy  
 facilité, *s.f.*, facility  
 façon, *s.f.*, fashion, way  
 fade, *adj.*, tasteless  
 faible, *adj.*, weak, feeble

faiblesse, *s.f.*, weakness, feebleness  
 fainéant, *adj.*, idle, lazy  
 fainéantise, *s.f.*, idleness, laziness  
 faire, *v.a.n.*, to do, to make  
 falloir, *v.imp.*, to be necessary  
 famille, *s.f.*, family  
 fatal, *adj.*, fatal  
 fatiguer (se), *v.r.*, to fatigue or to tire one's self  
 faucheur, -euse, *s.m.f.*, mower; (*fem.*) a mowing machine  
 faute, *s.f.*, fault, mistake  
 fauteuil, *s.m.*, arm-chair  
 favorable, *adj.*, favourable  
 favori, -te, *adj.*, favourite  
 fébrile, *adj.*, febrile  
 félon, *adj.*, felonious  
 félonie, *s.f.*, treason  
 fendre, *v.a.*, to split; fendre la presse, to squeeze through the throng  
 fermage, *s.m.*, rent (of a farm)  
 ferme, *s.f.*, farm  
 ferme, *adj.*, firm  
 fermeté, *s.f.*, firmness  
 fermer, *v.a.*, to close  
 fermier, *s.m.*, farmer  
 fermoir, *s.m.*, clasp  
 féroce, *adj.*, fierce, ferocious  
 ferrer, *v.a.*, to put iron to, to shoe (a horse)  
 ferrure, *s.f.*, iron-work  
 festin, *s.m.*, feast, banquet  
 fête, *s.f.*, feast, festival  
 feu, *s.m.*, fire  
 feuillage, *s.m.*, foliage  
 feuille, *s.f.*, leaf  
 feuillet, *s.m.*, leaflet  
 fidèle, *adj.*, faithful  
 fier, *adj.*, proud  
 figure, *s.f.*, figure, face

fier (se), *v.r.*, (*à, sur. en*) to trust, to confide (in), to rely (on)  
 fil, *s.m.*, thread  
 filasse, *s.f.*, tow  
 fille, *s.f.*, daughter, child  
 filleul, *s.m.*, godson, god-child  
 fils, *s.m.*, son, boy  
 fin, *adj.*, fine, sharp, shrewd  
 finaud, *adj.*, artful, cunning  
 finir, *v.a.*, to finish, to end  
 flâner, *v.n.*, to lounge  
 flâneur, *s.m.*, lounge  
 flatteur, -se, *s.m.f.*, flatterer, *adj.*, flattering  
 flétrir, (se) *v.r.*, to wither  
 flétrissure, *s.f.*, withering, disgrace  
 fleur, *s.f.*, flower  
 fleurir, *v.n.*, to blossom, to flourish  
 fleuriste, *s.m.*, flower-seller, flower-maker, flower gardener, florist  
 fonction, *s.f.*, duty, function  
 fondateur, -trice, *s.m.f.*, founder  
 fondement, *s.m.*, foundation  
 fondre, *v.a.*, to melt  
 forêt, *s.f.*, forest  
 forme, *s.f.*, shape, mould  
 format, *s.m.*, size (of a book)  
 fortune, *s.f.*, fortune, wealth  
 fou, fol, folle, *adj.*, mad, foolish; follet, -te, playful, foolish  
 foudre, *s.f.*, lightning, thunder, thunderbolt  
 fondroyant, *adj.*, thundering, thunder-staking

loup, *s.m.*, whip  
 fourbe, *s.m.*, knave,  
 cheat  
 fourberie, *s.f.*, knavery  
 fourche, *s.f.*, pitchfork  
 fourchette, *s.f.*, fork  
 fournir, *v.a.*, to furnish  
 fournisseur, *s.m.*, pur-  
 veyor  
 frais, fraîche, *adj.*, fresh,  
 cool  
 Français, *s.m.*, French-  
 man  
 franc, -che, *adj.*, free,  
 frank  
 franchise, *s.f.*, freedom,  
 frankness, franchise  
 fraude, *s.f.*, fraud, de-  
 ceit  
 frémir, *v.n.*, to shudder,  
 to quiver  
 frémissement, *s.m.*, shud-  
 der, thrill  
 fréquenter, *v.a.*, to fre-  
 quent  
 frère, *s.m.*, brother  
 frivole, *adj.*, frivolous  
 froment, *s.m.*, wheat  
 fruiterie, *s.f.*, fruitery  
 fuir, *v.a.n.*, to flee, to  
 fly  
 fumer, *v.a.*, to smoke  
 fumée, *s.f.*, smoke  
 fusil, *s.m.*, gun  
 fusillade, *s.f.*, firing, vol-  
 ley of musketry  
 fût, *s.m.*, cask  
 futaille, *s.f.*, small cask  
 fuyard, *adj.*, fugitive

## G

Gâcher, *v.a.*, to mix  
 (mortar), to make a  
 mess of  
 gâcher, *s.m.*, mess

gagner, *v.a.*, to gain, to  
 win  
 gai, -e, *adj.*, gay  
 galop, *s.m.*, gallop  
 galoper, *v.n.*, to gallop  
 garçon, *s.m.*, boy, ser-  
 vant, waiter  
 garde, *s.f.*, guard; se  
 tenir sur ses gardes, to  
 be on one's guard  
 garde, *s.m.*, guard, guar-  
 dian  
 garder, *v.a.*, to keep, to  
 guard  
 gardien, *s.m.*, keeper,  
 guardian  
 garnir, *v.a.*, to fill, to  
 trim  
 garnison, *s.f.*, garrison  
 Gascogne, *s.f.*, Gascony  
 Gascou, *s.adj.*, Gascon  
 gâteau, *s.m.*, cake  
 géant, *s.m.*, giant  
 gémir, *v.n.*, to groan, to  
 lament  
 gendarme, *s.m.*, gendarme  
 gendarmerie, *s.f.*, gen-  
 darmery  
 gêne, *s.f.*, trouble, un-  
 easiness  
 général, *s.m.*, general  
 généreux, -se, *adj.*, gene-  
 rous  
 générosité, *s.f.*, generosity  
 gens, *s.m.*, folks, persons,  
 men; les jeunes gens,  
 young people  
 gésir, *v.n.*, to lie  
 gibier, *s.m.*, game  
 glace, *s.f.*, ice  
 glaçon, *s.m.*, icicle  
 glissade, *s.f.*, slip  
 glisser, *v.n.*, to glide, to slip  
 golfe, *s.m.*, gulf  
 gomme, *s.f.*, gum  
 gommier, *s.m.*, gum-tree  
 gorger, *v.a.*, to gorge, to  
 glut  
 gorgée, *s.f.*, mouthful (of  
 a liquid), draught

gourmand, -e, *adj.*, greedy  
 goût, *s.m.*, taste  
 goûter, *v.a.*, to taste  
 goûter, *s.m.*, lunch  
 goutte, *s.f.*, drop  
 gouttelette, *s.f.*, little drop  
 gouvernail, *s.m.*, rudder  
 helm  
 grammair, *s.f.*, gram-  
 mar  
 graver, *v.a.*, to engrave  
 grand, -e, *adj.*, great, large,  
 wide  
 gravure, *s.f.*, engraving  
 grec, -que, *adj.*, Greek  
 grenade, *s.f.*, pome-  
 granate, grenade  
 grenadier, *s.m.*, pome-  
 granate-tree, grenadier  
 griffer, *v.a.*, to claw, to  
 scratch  
 griffonner, *v.n.*, to scrib-  
 ble  
 grillade, *s.f.*, broiled meat  
 grillage, *s.m.*, wire-work  
 grille, *s.f.*, grating  
 griller, *v.a.*, to broil  
 grogner, *v.n.*, to grum-  
 ble  
 grognon, *s.m.*, grumbler  
 gros, -se, *adj.*, big  
 grosseille, *s.f.*, currant  
 groseillier, *s.m.*, currant-  
 tree  
 grossir, *v.n.*, to become  
 big  
 guérir, *v.a.*, to cure  
 guérison, *s.f.*, recovery  
 guerre, *s.f.*, war  
 guerrier, *s.m.*, warrior  
 guêtre, *s.f.*, gaiter  
 guide, *s.m.*, guide  
 guidon, *s.m.*, guidon,  
 sight of a gun, flag,  
 cornet  
 Guillaume, *s.p.m.*, Wil-  
 liam

## II

Habile, *adj.*, clever, skilful, able  
 habiller, *v.a.*, to dress; s'habiller, to dress oneself  
 habit, *s.m.*, clothes, coat, dress-coat  
 habiter, *v.a.n.*, to inhabit  
 habitant, *s.m.*, inhabitant  
 habitation, *s.f.*, habitation, abode  
 habituer, (*s'*), *v.r.*, to accustom one's self  
 hache, *s.f.*, axe, hatchet  
 hacher, *v.a.*, to mince  
 hachis, *s.m.*, hash  
 hagard, *adj.*, haggard, wild  
 haie, *s.f.*, hedge, row, line  
 haine, *s.f.*, hatred  
 haïr, *v.a.*, to hate  
 hardi, *adj.*, bold  
 hardiesse, *s.f.*, boldness  
 hasard, *s.m.*, chance, hazard  
 haut, *adj.*, high  
 hauteur, *s.f.*, highness  
 hélas ! *int.*, alas ! ah !  
 hennir, *v.n.*, to neigh  
 herbe, *s.f.*, herb  
 herbage, *s.m.*, herbage  
 héritier, *s.m.*, heir  
 heur, *s.m.*, luck  
 heure, *s.f.*, hour  
 heureux, -se, *adj.*, happy, lucky, fortunate  
 hibou, *s.m.*, owl  
 hier, *adv.*, yesterday  
 histoire, *s.f.*, history  
 hiver, *s.m.*, winter  
 hommage, *s.m.*, homage  
 homme, *c.m.*, man  
 honnête, *adj.*, honest  
 honnêteté, *s.f.*, honesty  
 honteux, -se, *adj. m.f.*, ashamed, shameful  
 horloge, *s.f.*, clock

horloger, *s.m.*, clock-maker  
 hors, *prep.*, out  
 hospitalier, *adj.*, hospitable  
 hôte, *s.m.*, host  
 houille, *s.f.*, coal  
 houiller, *adj.*, containing coal; bassin houiller, coal-basin  
 huile, *s.f.*, oil  
 huilier, *s.m.*, oil-erect  
 huit, *adj.num.*, eight  
 huitaine, *s.f.*, about a week, or a week  
 humilier, *v.a.*, to humble

## I

Ici, *adv.*, here  
 île, *s.f.*, island  
 îlot, *s.m.*, islet  
 imaginer, (*s'*), *v.r.*, to imagine  
 immense, *adj.*, immenso  
 immensité, *s.f.*, immensity  
 impatient, *adj.*, impatient  
 impertinence, *s.f.*, impertinence  
 importance, *s.f.*, importance  
 impôt, *s.m.*, tax  
 imprimer, *v.a.*, to print  
 imprudemment, *adv.*, imprudently  
 impunément, *adv.*, with impunity  
 incendie, *s.m.*, fire, conflagration  
 inconstant, *adj.*, inconstant, inconsistent  
 indifférent, *adj.*, indifferent  
 infirme, *adj.*, infirm  
 infirmerie, *s.f.*, infirmary  
 inflexible, *adj.*, inflexible  
 ingénieux, -se, *adj.*, ingenious, clever

ingrat, *adj.*, ungrateful  
 inquiet, -ète, *adj.*, uneasy  
 insensible, *adj.*, insensible, unfeeling  
 insignifiant, *adj.*, insignificant  
 instituteur, *s.m.*, founder, tutor, schoolmaster  
 institutrice, *s.f.*, governess, school-mistress  
 insuffisant, *adj.*, insufficient  
 intention, *s.m.*, steward  
 intention, *s.f.*, intention, design  
 intéressant, *adj.*, interesting  
 intérêt, *s.m.*, interest  
 interne, *s.m.*, boarder  
 internat, *s.m.*, boarding-school  
 intervalle, *s.m.*, interval; *loc.*, à de longs intervalles, at long intervals  
 intime, *adj.*, intimate  
 intimité, *s.f.*, intimacy  
 invariable, *adj.*, invariable  
 inviter, *v.a.*, to invite  
 invité, *adj.*, invited  
 irai, *v.n.*, see aller, p. 112  
 Italien, *s.m.*, Italian

## J

Jalonx, -se, *adj.*, jealous  
 jalousie, *s.f.*, jealousy  
 jamais, *adv.*, ever; no... jamais, never  
 jambage, *s.m.*, stroke (of a pen), jamb  
 jambe, *s.f.*, leg  
 jambon, *s.m.*, ham  
 jardin, *s.m.*, garden  
 jardinage, *s.m.*, gardening  
 jardiner, *v.n.*, to garden  
 jardinier, *s.m.*, gardener  
 jatte, *s.f.*, bowl

jaillé, *s.f.*, bowl-full  
jaune, *adj.*, yellow  
jauni, *v.n.*, to become  
yellow  
je, *j'*, *pr. pers.*, I  
jeune, *adj.*, young  
jeûne, *s.m.*, fast, fasting  
joie, *s.f.*, joy  
joli, -e, *adj.*, pretty  
jouet, *s.m.*, toy, anything  
joueur, *s.m.*, player (*fem.*  
joueuse)  
joujou, *s.m.*, toy  
jour, *s.m.*, day; *loc.*, de  
jour en jour, from day  
to day  
journal, *s.m.*, journal,  
newspaper  
journaliste, *s.m.*, journal-  
ist  
joute, *s.f.*, joust, tilt, fight  
joyeux, -se, *adj.*, joyous,  
joyful  
jugement, *s.m.*, judgment  
juillet, *s.m.*, July  
jumeau, *s.m.*, twin  
jumelle, *adj.m.* (*fem.*  
jumelle), twin  
jupon, *s.f.*, skirt  
jupon, *s.m.*, petticoat  
jurer, *v.a.n.*, to swear  
juron, *s.m.*, oath  
jusque (à) *pr.*, to, as far as  
juste, *adj.*, just, correct,  
(*adv.*) chanter juste, to  
sing in tune  
justesse, *s.f.*, justness,  
accuracy, propriety  
justice, *s.f.*, justice  
justification, *s.f.*, justifi-  
cation

## K

Kilomètre, *s.m.*, kilo-  
meter

## L

La, *P.*, *art.f.*, the  
là, *pr. pers. reg. dir.*, her, it

là, *adv.*, there, thither;  
là-bas, yonder  
laborieux, -se *adj.*, labor-  
ious, industrious  
lait, *s.m.*, milk  
laiterie, *s.f.*, dairy  
laite, *s.f.*, soft-roe  
laité, -e, *adj.*, soft-roe'd  
lancer, *v.a.*, to dart, to  
throw, to cast  
langage, *s.m.*, language  
langue, *s.f.*, tongue  
languette, *s.f.*, tongue  
lard, *s.m.*, bacon  
lardon, *s.m.*, slice of  
bacon  
Latin, *s.m.*, Latin  
latiniste, *s.m.*, Latin  
schar  
lavage, *s.m.*, washing  
laver, *v.a.*, to wash  
laveur, *s.m.*, washer; la-  
veuse, *s.f.*, washer-  
woman  
lavis, *s.m.*, wash (drawing)  
le, *P.*, *art.m.*, the  
le, *P.*, *pr. pers. masc. reg.*  
*dir.*, him, it  
leçon, *s.f.*, lesson  
lecteur, *s.m.*, reader,  
lecturer  
lectrice, *s.f.*, reader  
lecture, *s.f.*, reading;  
cabinet de lecture,  
reading-rooms  
légereté, *s.f.*, lightness  
les, *art.pl.*, the  
les, *pr. pers. reg. dir. pl.*,  
them  
lettre, *s.f.*, letter  
lever (se), *v.r.*, to rise  
liaison, *s.f.*, union, joining  
libre, *adj.*, free  
lier, *v.a.*, to tie  
ligne, *s.f.*, line  
lignage, *s.m.*, lineage  
limon, *s.m.*, lemon  
limonade, *s.f.*, lemonade  
limonier, *s.m.*, lemon-tree  
lion, *s.m.*, lion

liquide, *s.m.*, and *adj.*,  
liquid  
lire, *v.a.*, to read  
lit, *s.m.*, bed  
livre, *s.m.*, book  
livre, *s.f.*, pound  
livret, *s.m.*, little book  
loger, *v.a.n.*, to lodge  
logis, *s.m.*, dwelling  
loi, *s.f.*, law  
Londres, *n.p.*, London  
louage, *s.m.*, letting out,  
hire  
Louis, *s.m.*, Lewis  
lourd, -e, *adj.*, heavy  
louve, *s.f.*, she-wolf  
loyal, -e, *adj.*, loyal  
loyer, *s.m.*, rent  
lu, *past part.*, of lire  
luxe, *s.m.*, luxury

## M

Mâcher, *v.a.*, to chew  
mâchoire, *s.f.*, jaw  
machine, *s.f.*, machine  
machiniste, *s.m.*, ma-  
chinist  
magasin, *s.m.*, shop  
magasinage, *s.m.*, ware-  
housing  
magicien, *s.m.*, magician  
magnifique, *adj.*, magni-  
ficent  
maigre, *adj.*, thin  
maille, *s.f.*, stitch, mesh,  
mail  
maillot, *s.m.*, swaddling  
clothes  
maint, -e, *adj.*, many  
maintenir, *v.a.*, to main-  
tain  
maison, *s.f.*, house  
maître, *s.m.*, master  
mal, *s.m.*, evil  
malade, *adj.*, ill, sick  
malformé, *adj.*, badly  
made, ill-shaped  
malhâbile, *adj.*, awkward

|   |  |   |
|---|--|---|
| malheur, <i>s.m.</i> , misfortune   | martyr, <i>s.m.</i> , martyr                             | messenger-ère, <i>s.m.f.</i> , messenger, courier; <i>adj.</i> , le pigeon messenger (Bérauger) |
| malheureux, -se, <i>adj.</i> , unhappy  | matin, <i>s.m.</i> , morning                             | mesure, <i>s.f.</i> , measure   |
| malin, maligne, <i>adj.</i> , malicious   | matinée, <i>s.f.</i> , morning, forenoon                 | mets, <i>s.m.</i> , dish  |
| malintentionné, <i>adj.</i> , evil-minded   | méchanceté, <i>s.f.</i> , wickedness                     | meurtrir, <i>v.a.</i> , to bruise   |
| malmené, <i>v.a.</i> , to ill-treat   | méchant, <i>adj.</i> , wicked, bad, naughty              | meurtrissure, <i>s.f.</i> , bruise  |
| malsain, <i>adj.</i> , unhealthy  | méchant, <i>s.m.</i> , wicked (person)                   | merveille, <i>s.f.</i> , wonder, marvel; à merveille, wonderfully well                          |
| maltraiter, <i>v.a.</i> , to ill-treat  | médaille, <i>s.f.</i> , medal                            | mieux, <i>adv.</i> , better   |
| malverser, <i>v.n.</i> , to be guilty of malversations  | médailleur, <i>v.a.</i> , to give a medal to             | mi-di, <i>s.m.</i> , noon, midday   |
| mangeoire, <i>s.f.</i> , manger   | mé-lailleur, <i>s.m.</i> , cabinet of medals             | mie, <i>s.f.</i> , crumb  |
| manger, <i>v.a.</i> , to eat  | médailleur, <i>s.m.</i> , medalist                       | miette, <i>s.f.</i> , crumb   |
| manger, <i>s.m.</i> , eating  | médailleur, <i>s.m.</i> , medalion                       | mi-jambe (à), half-way up the leg   |
| manquer, <i>v.n.</i> , to fail, to miss; manquer à, to be deficient or wanting (in), to fall short of | médioere, <i>adj.</i> , middling, indifferent            | mi-juillet, <i>s.f.</i> , middle of July  |
| mantean, <i>s.m.</i> , mantle   | médioere, <i>s.m.</i> , mediocrity                       | mince, <i>adj.</i> , thin   |
| mantelet, <i>s.m.</i> , mantlet   | médire, <i>v.n.</i> , to speak ill                       | minuit, <i>s.m.</i> , midnight  |
| marbre, <i>s.m.</i> , marble  | médiance, <i>s.f.</i> , slander                          | mi-partie, <i>s.f.</i> , half   |
| marbrerie, <i>s.f.</i> , marble-cutting, marble yard  | même, <i>adj.</i> (see paragraph 84)                     | miser, <i>v.n.</i> , to aim   |
| marchand, -e, <i>adj.</i> , saleable, trading   | même, <i>adv.</i> , even                                 | miroir, <i>s.m.</i> , looking-glass   |
| marchand, <i>s.m.</i> , dealer, tradesman, merchant   | ménage, <i>s.m.</i> , household, housekeeping, husbandry | mis, <i>past part.</i> of mettre, to put  |
| marehandise, <i>s.f.</i> , merchandise, goods   | ménager, <i>v.a.</i> , to husband, to take care of       | mode, <i>s.f.</i> , fashion   |
| maréchal, <i>s.m.</i> , farrier, marshal  | mendier, <i>v.a.</i> , to beg                            | modiste, <i>s.f.</i> , milliner   |
| mari, <i>s.m.</i> , husband   | mendiant, <i>s.m.</i> , beggar                           | modéré, -e, <i>adj.</i> , moderate  |
| mariage, <i>s.m.</i> , marriage   | mener, <i>v.a.</i> , to lead                             | modeste, <i>adj.</i> , modest   |
| marin, <i>s.m.</i> , seaman, sailor   | mensonge, <i>s.m.</i> , falsehood, story, lie            | moi, <i>pron. pers.</i> , 1. subject, I; 2. object (instead of à moi), to me, me                |
| Maroc, <i>s.m.</i> , Morocco  | mensonger, -ère, <i>adj.</i> , untrue, delusive          | moindre, <i>adj. comp.</i> , lesser, less (with the <i>def. art.</i> ), the least               |
| Marocain, <i>s.m.</i> , native of Morocco   | mentir, <i>v.n.</i> , to lie, to tell a falsehood        | moins, <i>adv.</i> , less; le moins, the least  |
| ma que, <i>s.f.</i> , mark  | menton, <i>s.m.</i> , chin                               | moisir, <i>v.n.</i> , to mould  |
| marquis, <i>s.m.</i> , marquis  | mer, <i>s.f.</i> , sea                                   | moisissure, <i>s.f.</i> , mouldiness  |
| marquisat, <i>s.m.</i> , marquise   | mercier, <i>s.m.</i> , haberdasher, mercer               | mollesse, <i>s.f.</i> , softness, indolence   |
| marteau, <i>s.m.</i> , hammer   | mériter, <i>v.a.</i> , to deserve, to merit              | mollet, -ette, <i>dim. adj.</i> , soft; pain mollet, roll                                       |
| martelet, <i>s.m.</i> , little hammer   | message, <i>s.m.</i> , message                           | mon, ma, mes, <i>adj. poss.</i> , my  |

monarchie, *s.f.*, monarchy; monarchique, monarchial  
 monarchiste, *s.m.*, monarchist  
 monde, 1. *s.m.*, world, people, company; 2. tout le monde, *pr.ind.*, everybody  
 mondain, *adj.*, worldly; mundane  
 monotone, *adj.*, monotonous  
 monotonie, *s.f.*, monotony  
 monsieur, *s.m.*, (*pl.* messieurs) sir, gentleman  
 montagne, *s.f.*, mountain  
 montagnard, *s.m.*, mountaineer, highlander  
 montant, *s.m.*, amount  
 monter, *v.n.*, to mount  
 montée, *s.f.*, ascent, rise  
 montre, *s.f.*, watch  
 montrer, *v.a.*, to show  
 moquer (se), *v.r.* (de), to laugh (at)  
 moqueur, -se, *adj.*, sarcastic  
 morale, *s.f.*, morals  
 moraliste, *s.m.*, moralist  
 morceau, *s.m.*, bit, piece, morsel; *lit.*, passage  
 mordre, *v.a.*, to bite  
 mort, *s.f.*, death  
 mot, *s.m.*, word  
 moteur, motrice, *s.m.f.*, mover, moving-power  
 motif, *s.m.*, motive  
 mou, mol, molle, *adj.*, soft  
 mouche, *s.f.*, fly  
 moucher, *v.a.*, to blow one's nose  
 moucheron, *s.m.*, gnat  
 mouchoir, *s.m.*, handkerchief  
 mouiller, *v.a.*, to wet  
 moule, *s.m.*, shape, mould  
 moulage, *s.m.*, moulding

mourir, *v.n.*, to die; se mourir (*ref.*) to be dying  
 moult, *s.m.*, must, unfermented wine  
 moutarde, *s.f.*, mustard  
 moutardier, *s.m.*, mustard-pot  
 mouvoir, *v.a.*, to move  
 fournir, *v.a.*, to provide  
 mur, *s.m.*, wall; muraille, thick wall  
 mûr, *adj.*, ripe  
 musicien, -ne, *s.m.f.*, musician

## N

Nager, *v.n.*, to swim  
 nageoire, *s.f.*, fin  
 nageur, *s.m.*, swimmer  
 naître, *v.n.*, to be born  
 naissance, *s.f.*, birth  
 nation, *s.f.*, nation, people  
 nature, *s.f.*, nature  
 navigation, *s.f.*, navigation  
 navire, *s.m.*, ship  
 ne, *adv.*, 1. before or after aucun, rien, jamais, etc.; no, not. 2. instead of ne pas; not. 3. ne . . . pas, ne . . . point; not, *loc. ne* . . . que, but, only  
 néanmoins, *adv.*, nevertheless  
 nègre, *s.m.*, negro  
 négresse, *s.f.*, negress  
 négriillon, -ne, *s.m.f.*, negro-boy; negro-girl  
 net, nette, *adj.*, clean  
 net, plain  
 netteté, *s.f.*, cleanness, clearness, plainness  
 nettoyer, *v.a.*, to clean  
 nettoyage, nettoyage, *s.m.*, cleaning, clearing  
 neuf, *adj.*, new; nine

neveu, *s.m.*, nephew  
 ni, *conj.*, neither, nor  
 niche, *s.f.*, niche, kennel  
 nichée, *s.f.*, brood  
 noué, *s.m.*, knot  
 noir, *adj.*, black  
 noirâtre, *adj.*, blackish  
 noiraud, *adj.*, dark, (conplexion) darkish  
 noix, *s.f.*, walnut, nut  
 nombreux, -se, *adj.*, numerous  
 non-paiement, *s.m.*, want of payment  
 non-sens, *s.m.*, nonsense  
 non-valeur, *s.f.*, thing without value  
 nord, *s.m.*, north  
 Normand, *s.m.*, Norman  
 notre, nos, *adj.*, our  
 nôtre (le, la) *pr.poss.*, ours  
 nourrir, *v.a.*, to nourish, to feed  
 se nourrir, *v.r.*, to feed, to live  
 nouvelle, *s.f.*, news, tidings, intelligence  
 nuire, *v.n.*, to injure, to harm, to do harm  
 nuit, *s.f.*, night  
 nul, nulle, *adj.*, and *pr.ind.*, no, none

## O

Obéir, *v.n.*, to obey  
 obéissance, *s.f.*, obedience  
 obéissant, -e, *adj.*, obedient  
 obliger, *v.a.*, to oblige  
 obligeance, *s.f.*, kindness  
 obstacle, *s.m.*, obstacle  
 occasion, *s.f.*, occasion, opportunity  
 occuper, (s'), *v.r.*, to occupy one's self  
 œil, *s.m.*, eye  
 œilhide, *s.f.*, g'auc, ogle  
 œuf, *s.m.*, egg



officier, *s.m.*, officer  
 offre, *s.f.*, offer, tender  
 oiseau, *s.m.*, bird  
 oisif, -ve, *adj.*, idle  
 ombre, *s.f.*, shade, shadow  
 ombrelle, *s.f.*, parasol  
 oncle, *s.m.*, uncle  
 opiniâtre, *adj.*, obstinate  
 opinion, *s.f.*, opinion  
 orange, *s.f.*, orange  
 orangé, *adj.*, orange-colour  
 orangade, *s.f.*, orangade  
 orangent, *s.m.*, candied  
 orange-peel  
 oranger, *s.m.*, orange-tree  
 orangerie, *s.f.*, orange-house  
 oreille, *s.f.*, ear  
 oreiller, *s.m.*, pillow  
 orgueil, *s.m.*, pride  
 orme, *s.m.*, elm  
 ormeau, *s.m.* young elm,  
 elm  
 orphelin, *s.m.*, orphan,  
 (boy)  
 où, *adv.*, where, whither  
 ou, *conj.*, or  
 oublié, *s.m.*, forgetfulness  
 oublier, *v.a.*, to forget  
 œuvre, *s.2g.*, work  
 ouïr, *v.a.*, to hear; ouïr  
 dire, to hear (it said)  
 ours, *s.m.*, bear  
 ouvrier, *v.a.*, to work  
 ouvrage, *s.m.*, work  
 ouvrier, *s.m.*, workman

## P

Pain, *s.m.*, bread  
 pair, *s.m.*, equal, fellow,  
 peer  
 pair, *adj.*, equal  
 paire, *s.f.*, pair  
 palais, *s.m.*, palace  
 pâle, *adj.*, pale  
 palot, -te, *adj.*, palish  
 pampasse, *s.f.*, waste  
 papier

papier, *s.m.*, paper  
 parade, *s.f.*, parade, show  
 pardon, *s.m.*, pardon  
 parents, *s.pl.*, parents.  
 relations  
 parenté, *s.f.*, relationship  
 parer, *v.a.*, to adorn  
 parler, *v.a.n.*, to speak  
 parloir, *s.m.*, parlour  
 parole, *s.f.*, word  
 parti, *s.m.*, party, decision  
 partie, *s.f.*, part, portion  
 partir, *v.n.*, to set out  
 partout, *adv.*, everywhere  
 pas, *adv.*, not; see ne  
 passage, *s.m.*, passage  
 passager, -ère, *adj.*, passing, short-lived, transitory  
 passer, *v.n.*, to pass  
 passant, *s.m.*, passer-by  
 pâté, *s.m.*, pie  
 pâte, *s.f.*, paste  
 pâtée, *s.f.*, paste, mess  
 patience, *s.f.*, patience  
 patin, *s.m.*, skate  
 pauvre, *adj.*, poor; les  
 pauvres, the poor  
 pauvreté, *s.f.*, poverty  
 paiement, *s.m.*, payment  
 pays, *s.m.*, country, birth-place  
 paysage, *s.m.*, landscape  
 paysagiste, *s.m.*, landscape painter  
 paysan, *s.m.*, peasant,  
 countryman  
 péage, *s.m.*, toll, toll-house  
 péager, *s.m.*, toll-gatherer  
 taxe-péagère, tax, toll  
 pêche, *s.f.*, peach  
 pécher, *s.m.*, peach-tree  
 pêcher, *v.a.n.*, to fish  
 pêcher, *v.n.*, to sin  
 pêcheur, *s.m.*, fisherman  
 pécheur, *s.m.*, sinner  
 peigner, *v.a.*, to comb  
 peignoir, *s.m.*, dressing-gown (lady's)

pèlerin, *s.m.*, pilgrim  
 pèlerinage, *s.m.*, pilgrim-  
 mage  
 penchant, *s.m.*, leaning  
 pencher, *v.n.*, to lean  
 pendant, *pr.*, during  
 pendre, *v.a.*, to hang  
 pendu, *s.m.*, hanged man  
 pensée, *s.f.*, thought  
 penser, *v.a.n.*, to think  
 pensif, -ve, *adj.*, pensive,  
 thoughtful  
 percevoir, *v.a.*, to gather  
 in, to collect  
 percher, *v.n.*, to perch  
 perchoir, *s.m.*, roost  
 perdrix, *s.f.*, partridge  
 perdue, *p.p.fem.* of perdre,  
 to lose  
 père, *s.m.*, father  
 perfide, *adj.*, perfidious,  
 treacherous  
 perfidie, *s.f.*, perfidy,  
 treacherousness  
 péril, *s.m.*, peril, danger  
 période, *s.2g.*, period  
 permettre, *v.a.*, to allow,  
 to permit to suffer  
 persévérance, *s.f.*, perse-  
 verance  
 persister, *v.n.*, to persist  
 personne, *s.f.*, person,  
 (*pl.*) people, persons;  
*loc.* une jeune per-  
 sonne, a young lady  
 personne, *pr.ind.*, page 64  
 perte, *s.f.*, loss  
 petit, *adj.*, small, little  
 petitesse, *s.f.*, littleness,  
 meanness  
 peu, *adv.*, little, few  
 peu, *s.m.*, a little, a few  
 peuple, *s.m.*, people  
 peuplade, *s.f.*, tribe  
 pierraille, *s.f.*, broken  
 stone  
 pierre, *s.f.*, stone  
 pierreux, -se, *adj.*, stony  
 pillage, *s.m.*, plunder  
 pinard, *adj.*, plundering

, pilgrim  
s.m., pilgrim

m., leaning  
, to lean

, during  
to hang

changed man  
thought

, to think  
s.f., pensivo,

, to gather  
et

to perch  
, roost

partridge  
of perdre,

ther  
perfidious,

, perfidy,  
ness

ril, danger  
period

, to allow,  
suffer

s.f., perse-

to persist  
, person,

persons;  
une per-

ng lady  
d., page 64

l, little  
littleness,

, few  
e, a few

ople  
rbe

broken

e  
s.f., stony

nder  
ndering

pller, v.a., to plunder

pis, adv.comp., worse

pistolet, s.m., pistol

pitifé, s.f., pity

place, s.f., place

plaindre, v.a., to pity

plainte, s.f., complaint

plaire, v.n., to please

se plaire, v.r., to please  
one's self or each other,

to take delight, to be  
delighted

plaisir, s.m., pleasure

plancher, s.m., floor,  
ceiling

plat, s.m., dish

plateau, s.m., wooden  
basin, tray

plein, -e, adj., full

pleurer, v.a., to mourn  
over

pleurer, v.n., to weep, to  
cry

pleuvoir, v.i., to rain

pli, s.m., fold

pliage, s.m., folding

plier, v.a., to fold

plomb, s.m., lead

plombier, s.m., plumber

plonger, v.a.n., to plunge

plongeon, s.m., diver  
(bird)

plumage, s.m., plumage

plumassier, s.m., feather-  
seller

plumasserie, s.f., feather-  
trade

plume, s.f., feather, pen

plumée, s.f., penful

plumeau, s.m., feather-  
broom

plumer, v.a., to pluck the  
feathers

plumet, s.m., plumet

plusieurs, adj.ind., sever-  
al

poète, s.m., poet

pointe, s.f., point, top

pointu, adj., pointed,  
sharp

poire, s.f., pear

poirier, s.m., pear-tree

pois, s.m., pea

poivrade, s.f., pepper sauce

poivre, s.m., pepper

poivrer, v.a., to pepper

poivrier, s.m., pepper-tree

poivrière, s.f., pepper-box

pôle, s.m., pole

polir, v.a., to polish

polisseur, s.m., polisher

polissure, s.f., polishing

pomme, s.f., apple

pommeau, s.m., pommel

pommier, s.m., apple-tree

pont, s.m., bridge, deck

porcelaine, s.f., china,  
porcelain; de or en

porcelaine, china (adj.)

port, s.m., port, harbour

porter, v.a., to bear, to  
carry, to wear

se porter, v.r., to be,  
to do; comment vous

portez-vous? how do  
you do? je me porte

assez bien, I am pretty  
well

porte, s.f., door

portier, s.m., door-keeper

possible, adj., possible

possible, s.m., possibility,  
what is possible; je

ferai tout mon possi-  
ble, I will do my ut-

most, all I can

poularde, s.f., fat poulet

poule, s.f., hen

poulet, s.m., chicken

pour, prep., for (before a  
infinitive), to, in order

to

pourquoi? conj. and adv.,  
why? wherefore? what

...for?

poursuivre, v.a., to pur-  
sue

pouvoir, v.n., to pro-  
vide

poussée, s.f., push

pousser, v.a., to push

pouvoir, v.a.n., to be  
able (to do)

pouvoir, s.m., power

prairie, s.f., meadow

pratiquer, v.a., to practice

précipiter, (se), v.r., to  
fling one's self head-

long, to run headlong-

précipiter, v.a., to pre-  
cipitate

précipité, s.m., precipitate

précocce, adj., precocious

préférer, v.a., to prefer

préfet, s.m., prefect

prendre, v.a., to take

près, prep. (de), near

presbytère, s.m., parson-  
age, vicarage

présent, s.m., present, gift

présent, adj., present

présenter, v.a., to present,  
to offer

président, s.m., president

présider, v.n., to preside

presque, adv., almost,  
nearly

prêt, adj., ready

prétendre, v.a.n., to pre-  
tend, to pretend to, to

claim

preuve, s.f., proof

prévaloir, v.n., to prevail

prévenir, v.a., to precede,  
to prevent, to antici-

pate

prévenant, *adj.*, complaisant  
 prévoir, *v.a.*, to foresee  
 prévoyance, *s.f.*, foresight  
 prévôt, *s.m.*, provost  
 prévôté, *s.f.*, provostship  
 prince, *s.m.*, prince  
 princesse, *s.f.*, princess  
 prise, *p.p.fem.*, of prendre, to take  
 procéder, *v.n.*, to proceed  
 procédé, *s.m.*, proceeding, operation  
 prochain, *adj.*, near, nearest, next  
 proche, *adj.*, near, nigh  
 proches, *s.m.pl.*, kindred  
 profiter, *v.n.*, to profit  
 projet, *s.m.*, project  
 promener, (se), *v.r.*, to walk  
 promenoir, *s.m.*, place for walking  
 prompt, -e, *adj.*, prompt, quick  
 prononcer, *v.a.*, to pronounce  
 prophète, *s.m.*, prophet  
 propos, *s.m.*, speech, talk, tattle, purpose; à propos, to the purpose  
 proposer, *v.a.*, to propose  
 proposer, (se), *v.r.*, to purpose  
 propre, *adj.*, clean, own, proper  
 propriété, *s.f.*, property  
 protester, *v.a.n.*, to protest  
 protestant, *s.m.*, protestant  
 prudence, *s.f.*, prudence  
 prudent, -e, *adj.*, prudent  
 prune, *s.f.*, plum  
 pruneau, *s.m.*, small plum, French plum  
 pruuelle, *s.f.*, sloe, eyeball

public (publique, *f.*), public  
 publicain, *s.m.*, publican  
 puis, *v.a.n.*, *ind.pres.* of pouvoir, to be able  
 puisque, *conj.*, since  
 puissant, *adj.*, powerful  
 punir, *v.a.*, to punish  
 punissable, *adj.*, punishable  
 punition, *s.f.*, punishment  
 pureté, *s.f.*, purity

## Q

Quand, *adv.*, when  
 quand, *conj.*, though  
 quant (à), *adv.*, with, in regard to, as to  
 quarante, *adj.n.*, forty; quarantaine, *s.f.*, about forty, or quarantine  
 quatre, *adj.*, four  
 quatrain, *s.m.*, quatrain  
 que, *p.rel.*, whom, that, which, (*interr.*) what?  
 que, *conj.*, that, than, as  
 que, *adv.*, how, how much, how many, why  
 quel, quelle, *adj.*, what (*parag.* 107)  
 quelconque, *adj.ind.*, whatever, whatsoever  
 quelquefois, *adv.*, sometimes  
 question, *s.f.*, question  
 queue, *s.f.*, tail, end  
 qui, *pr.rel.sub.*, who, that; *obj.*, whom, that, which; *interr.*, who, whom, which  
 quille, *s.f.*, keel, skittle  
 quinze, *adj.*, fifteen  
 quinzaine, *s.f.*, about fifteen or a fortnight  
 quoique, *conj.*, though, although

## R

Raout, *s.m.*, band (for the neck)  
 rabattre, *v.a.*, to bent down  
 rabot, *s.m.*, plane  
 raboté, *adj.*, uneven, rugged  
 raconter, *v.a.*, to relate  
 raffiner, *v.a.*, to refine; raffinage, refining  
 rail, *s.m.*, rail  
 raisin, *s.m.*, grapes  
 rallonger, *v.a.*, to lengthen  
 rallonge, *s.f.*, lengthening piece, leaf of a table  
 ramer, *v.n.*, to row  
 rameur, *s.m.*, rower  
 rang, *s.m.*, rank  
 rangée, *s.f.*, row  
 ranger, *v.a.*, to put in a row  
 râpe, *s.m.*, rasp  
 râper, *v.a.*, to rasp  
 rapidement, *adv.*, rapidly  
 rayon, *s.m.*, ray, beam, shelf  
 rebuter, *v.a.*, to repel, to rebuff  
 rebut, *s.m.*, refuse  
 recevoir, *v.a.*, to receive  
 récompenser, *v.a.*, to reward, to recompense  
 reconnaître, *v.a.*, to recognise  
 reconnaissance, *s.f.*, gratitude  
 recel, *s.m.*, recoil  
 reculade, *s.f.*, backing, retreat  
 redevoir, *v.a.*, to owe still  
 réduire, *v.a.*, to reduce  
 réduit, *s.m.*, small habitation  
 réformer, *v.a.*, to reform  
 refus, *s.m.*, refusal  
 régat, *s.m.* (*pl.* régats), entertainment, feast, treat

- régir, *v.a.*, to administer  
 régisseur, *s.m.*, administrator, steward  
 règle, *s.f.*, rule  
 règne, *s.m.*, reign  
 reine, *s.f.*, queen  
 rejet, *s.m.*, rejection, shoot  
 rejeter, *v.a.*, to throw again, to throw back or away, to reject, to set aside  
 rejeton, *s.m.*, sprout, scion, offspring  
 réjouir, (*se*), *v.r.*, to rejoice  
 relancer, *v.a.*, to start anew  
 relier, *v.a.*, to bind  
 relieur, *s.m.*, binder  
 religieux, *-se, adj.*, religious  
 remarque, *s.f.*, remark  
 remarquer, *v.a.*, to remark, to notice  
 remerciement, *s.m.*, thanks  
 remontrer, *v.a.*, to remonstrate  
 remontrance, *s.f.*, remonstrance  
 remplir, *v.a.*, to fill again, to fill up; remplir un devoir, to fulfil a duty  
 replumcr, *v.a.*, to feather again  
 renard, *s.m.*, fox  
 renchéir, *v.a.*, to raise the price of  
 rencontrer *v.a.*, to meet  
 rendre, *v.a.*, to render, to give back  
 se rendre, *v.r.*, 1. to repair, to betake one's self; 2. to yield; 3. to give one's self up, to surrender  
 renforter, *v.a.*, to strengthen, to reinforce  
 renommer, *v.a.*, to name again  
 renommée, *s.f.*, fame  
 renoncer, *v.n.*, to renounce  
 repaître, (*se*), *v.r.*, (*de*) to feed on  
 répandre, *v.a.*, to pour, to spill, to spread  
 répondre, *v.a.*, to answer  
 reposer, *v.n.*, reposer, (*se*), *v.r.*, to rest  
 repousser, *v.a.*, to repulse  
 repoussoir, *s.m.*, driving bolt  
 reprendre, *v.a.*, to resume  
 reprise, *s.f.*, retaking, renewal; à deux reprises différentes, two several times  
 république, *s.f.*, republic  
 républicain, *s.m.*, republican  
 répugner, *v.n.*, to be repugnant  
 répugnance, *s.f.*, repugnance  
 réputation, *s.f.*, reputation, fame  
 requérir, *v.a.*, to request, to demand, to require  
 requête, *s.f.*, request, petition  
 réserver, *v.a.*, to reserve  
 réservoir, *s.m.*, reservoir, cistern  
 ressemblance, *s.f.*, likeness  
 ressembler, *v.n.*, to resemble  
 ressentir, *v.a.*, to feel, to resent  
 ressort, *s.m.*, spring  
 ressource, *s.f.*, resource  
 rester, *v.n.*, to stay, to remain  
 retirer (*se*), *v.r.*, to retire, to withdraw  
 retrancher, *v.a.*, to trench  
 réussir, *v.n.*, to succeed  
 revenir, *v.n.*, to come back  
 revenu, *s.m.*, income, revenue  
 rêver, *v.a.n.*, to dream; rêvasser, *v.n.*, to muse  
 revers, *s.m.*, back, reverse  
 revêtir, *v.a.*, to clothe again  
 revoir, *v.a.*, to see again  
 revue, *s.f.*, review  
 riche, *adj.*, rich, wealthy  
 richesse, *s.f.*, riches, wealth  
 ridicule, *adj.*, ridiculous  
 rien, *s. and pr.*, (page 64)  
 rieur, *s.m.*, laughter  
 rire, *v.n.*, to laugh  
 rirc, *s.m.*, laughter  
 rivage, *s.m.*, shore, bank  
 robe, *s.f.*, dress  
 roc, *s.m.*, rock  
 rocaille, *s.f.*, rock-work  
 rodomont, *s.m.*, swaggerer  
 rodomontade, *s.f.*, swaggering  
 roi, *s.m.*, king  
 Rome, *s.f.*, Rome  
 romain, *-e, adj.*, Roman  
 rond, *-e, adj.*, round  
 rondlet, *adj.*, plump  
 rose, *s.f.*, rose  
 rosier, *s.m.*, rose-tree  
 roue, *s.f.*, wheel  
 rouge, *adj.*, red  
 rougeâtre, *adj.*, reddish  
 rougcaud, *-e, adj.*, ruddy, red-faced  
 rougir, *v.a.n.*, to redden  
 rouler, *v.a.*, to roll  
 roulade, *s.f.*, trill  
 roullis, *s.m.*, rolling (of ships)  
 route, *s.f.*, road, route, way  
 roux, *-sse, adj.*, sandy (of the hair)  
 rude, *s.f.*, kick  
 rude, *adj.*, rough, rude  
 rudesse, *s.f.*, roughness, rudeness  
 rue, *s.f.*, street

ruelle, *s.f.*, lane, bedside  
ruer, *v.n.*, to kick  
rugir, *v.n.*, to roar  
rugissement, *s.m.*, roar-  
ing  
rumeur, *s.f.*, rumour

## S

Sable, *s.m.*, sand  
sablier, *s.m.*, hour-glass,  
sand-box  
sac, *s.m.*, sack, bag  
sachet, *s.m.*, little bag  
sacrifier, *v.a.*, to sacrifice  
sage *adj.*, wise  
sagesse, *s.f.*, wisdom  
saison, *s.f.*, season  
salade, *s.f.*, salad  
saladier, *s.m.*, salad-dish  
salaud, *adj.*, slovenly  
sale, *adj.*, dirty  
saler, *v.a.*, to salt  
salir, *v.a.*, to soil  
saloir, *s.m.*, salting-tub  
salutaire, *adj.*, salutary  
sangle, *s.f.*, strap, band,  
girth  
sanglé, *p.part.* of sang-  
ler, to strap, to give  
blows  
sans, *prep.*, without  
sans - dent, without  
teeth  
sans-*façon*, *loc.adv.*, un-  
ceremoniously  
sans-gêne, *s.m.*, tree  
manners; *adv.*, un-  
ceremoniously  
satisfait, *-e, adj.*, satis-  
fied, pleased  
sauteur, *-se, s.m.f.*, leaper,  
jumper  
sauvage, *adj.*, wild  
savant, *-e, adj.*, learned  
savoir, *v.a.*, to know  
savoir, *s.m.*, knowledge  
savonnage, *s.m.*, washing  
with soap

savonner, *v.a.*, to lather  
scie, *s.f.*, saw  
science, *s.f.*, science  
scier, *v.a.*, to saw  
se, *v.o.*, *pr.pers.*, (*parag.*  
95, 96)  
secours, *s.m.*, succour,  
help, aid  
Seigneur, *s.m.*, Lord  
séjour, *s.m.*, stay  
semier, *v.a.*, to sow  
semis, *s.m.*, seed-plot  
sens, *s.m.*, sense, mean-  
ing  
sentence, *s.f.*, sentence  
sentiment, *s.m.*, sensa-  
tion, feeling, senti-  
ment  
sentir, *v.a.*, to feel  
seoir, *v.n.*, to be becom-  
ing  
séparable, *adj.*, separable  
séparer, *v.a.*, to separate  
serrure, *s.f.*, lock  
serrurier, *s.m.*, locksmith  
servir, *v.a.*, to serve, to  
be useful  
si, *conj.*, if, whether  
si, *adv.*, so  
siècle, *s.m.*, century, age,  
time, world  
siège, *s.m.*, seat  
siéger, *v.n.*, to preside  
signal, *s.m.*, signal  
sincère, *adj.*, sincere  
sincérité, *s.f.*, sincerity  
singe, *s.m.*, monkey  
singorie, *s.f.*, apishness,  
mimicry  
situation, *s.f.*, situation  
sobre, *adj.*, sober  
sobriété, *s.f.*, sobriety  
social, *-e, adj.*, social  
société, *s.f.*, society,  
company  
sœur, *s.f.*, sister  
soigneux, *-se, adj.*, care-  
ful  
soin, *s.m.*, care  
soir, *s.m.*, evening

soirée, *s.f.*, evening,  
evening party  
soixante, *adj.ind.*, sixty  
soixantains, *s.f.*, about  
sixty  
sol, *s.m.*, soil, ground  
soldat, *s.m.*, soldier  
solde, *s.f.*, pay  
somme, *s.m.*, nap, sleep  
somme, *s.f.*, sum  
sommol, *s.m.*, sleep  
son, *sa, ses, adj.poss.*,  
his, her, its, one, one's  
sortir, *v.n.*, to go out  
soulier, *s.m.*, shoe  
soumis, *adj.*, obedient  
sot, *soite, adj.*, foolish,  
silly  
sottise, *s.f.*, folly, foolery  
souci, *s.m.*, care, anxiety  
soucier, (*se*), *v.n.*, to care  
souffrir, *v.n.*, to suffer  
souffrance, *s.f.*, suffering  
souhait, *s.m.*, wish  
souhaiter, *v.a.*, to wish  
soulèvement, *s.m.*, heav-  
ing, rising, insurrec-  
tion  
soulier, *s.m.*, shoe  
souper, *v.n.*, to sup  
souper, *s.m.*, supper  
soupir, *s.m.*, sigh  
soupirail, *s.m.*, air-hole  
soupirer, *v.n.*, to sigh  
sourire, *v.n.*, to smile  
sous, *prep.*, under  
sous-axillaire, *adj.*, sub-  
axillary  
sous - intendant, *s.m.*,  
understeward  
sous-jacent, *-e, adj.*, sub-  
jacent  
sous-maitre, *s.m.*, under-  
master, usher  
sous-marin, *adj.*, sub-  
marine  
sous-officier, *s.m.*, non-  
commissioned officer  
sous-préfet, *s.m.*, sub-  
prefect

sous sol, *s.m.*, basement  
 souvenir, *s.m.*, remembrance  
 souvenir, (se), *v.r.*, to remember  
 souvent, *adv.*, often  
 stimulant, *s.m.*, stimulant  
 stimuler, *v.a.*, to stimulate  
 studieux, -se, *adj.*, studious  
 style, *s.m.*, style  
 succès, *s.m.*, success  
 sucre, *s.m.*, sugar  
 sucrier, *s.m.*, sugar-basin  
 suffire, *v.n.*, to suffice  
 suffisance, *s.f.*, sufficiency  
 Suisse, *s.m.*, Swiss  
 Suisseuse, *s.f.*, Swiss-woman  
 suivre, *v.a.*, to follow  
 sujet, *s.m.*, subject  
 suppliant, *adj.* (*pers.*), suppliant, (*things*) beseeching  
 sur, *prep.*, on, upon, over, above  
 sûr, -e, *adj.*, sure, certain, safe  
 sûreté, *s.f.*, safety  
 surface, *s.f.*, surface  
 surmonter, *v.a.*, to overcome, to surmount  
 surnager, *v.n.*, to float (upon the surface), to swim  
 surpasser, *v.a.*, to surpass  
 surprendre, *v.a.*, to surprise  
 surseoir, *v.n.*, to respite  
 surveiller, *v.a.*, to watch  
 suspendre, *v.a.*, to suspend  
 syllabe, *s.f.*, syllable  
 symbole, *s.m.*, symbol  
 syndic, *s.m.*, syndic  
 syndicat, *s.m.*, syndicate

## T

Table, *s.f.*, table  
 tablée, *s.f.*, tablefull  
 tableau, *s.m.*, picture, painting, table, board  
 tablette, *s.f.*, tablet  
 tablier, *s.m.*, apron  
 tache, *s.f.*, spot, stain, blot  
 tacher, *v.a.*, to spot  
 tâche, *s.f.*, task  
 tâcher, *v.n.*, to endeavour  
 tailler, *v.a.*, to cut  
 tailleur, *s.m.*, tailor  
 taillis, *s.m.*, copse  
 tante, *s.f.*, aunt  
 taper, *v.a.*, to smack, to hit  
 tapis, *s.m.*, carpet  
 tapissier, *s.m.*, upholsterer  
 tapoter, *v.a.*, to pat  
 tard, *adv.*, late  
 tarte, *s.f.*, tart  
 tartelette, *s.f.*, tartlet  
 teindre, *v.a.*, to dye  
 tel, telle, *adj.* and *pr.ind.*, such  
 télégramme, *s.m.*, telegram  
 témoignage, *s.m.*, testimony  
 témoigner, *v.a.*, to testify  
 tempérance, *s.f.*, temperance  
 température, *s.f.*, temperature  
 tempérer, *v.a.*, to temper  
 tempête, *s.f.*, tempest, storm  
 tendre, *v.a.*, to stretch  
 tendre, *adj.*, tender  
 tendresse, *s.f.*, tenderness  
 tenir, *v.a.*, to hold  
 terminaison, *s.f.*, termination  
 terminer, *v.a.*, to end  
 ternir, *v.a.*, to tarnish, to stain

terrain, *s.m.*, ground  
 terrasse, *s.f.*, terrace  
 terre, *s.f.*, land, earth  
 texte, *s.m.*, text  
 thé, *s.m.*, tea  
 thème, *s.m.*, exercise  
 tige, *s.f.*, stalk, stem  
 tigre, *s.m.*, tiger  
 timide, *adj.*, timid  
 timidité, *s.f.*, timidity  
 tirer, *v.a.*, to draw, to pull  
 tirage, *s.m.*, drawing (of a lottery), pulling (printing)  
 tiroir, *s.m.*, drawer  
 tombe, *s.f.*, 1. tomb, tombstone; 2. tomb, grave  
 tombeau, *s.m.*, 1. tomb (monument); 2. tombstone  
 tonne, *s.f.*, tun  
 tonneau, *s.m.*, cask  
 tonnelle, *s.f.*, arbour  
 tonnerre, *s.m.*, thunder  
 tordre, *v.a.*, to wring, to twist  
 tort, *s.m.*, wrong; avoir tort, to be wrong  
 tôt, *adv.*, soon; tôt ou tard, sooner or later  
 touchant, -e, *adj.*, affecting, touching  
 toucher, *v.a.*, to touch  
 toucher, *s.m.*, touch (the sense)  
 touffe, *s.f.*, tuft  
 toujours, *adv.*, always  
 Toulouse, *s.p.*, Toulouse  
 Toulousain, *s.m.*, native of Toulouse  
 tour, *s.m.*, turn, trip, tour, trick  
 tour, *s.f.*, tower  
 tourelle, *s.f.*, turret  
 tourmenter, *v.a.*, to torment  
 tout, *adj.* and *pr.ind.*, every, all; *loc.*, tous les jours, every day

|  |   |   |
|--|---|---|
| tracer, v.a., to trace, to draw out                              | trouble, s.m., trouble, confusion                     | vassal, s.m., vassal                      |
| trahir, v.a., to betray  | trouver, v.a., to find, to think, to like             | vaut, 3.p.p.ind. of valoir, to be worth   |
| trahison, s.f., treason  | tuer, v.a., to kill                                   | végétal, s.m., vegetable                  |
| train, s.m., train   | tuile, s.f., tile                                     | veille, s.f., watch                       |
| trafûce, s.f., trail   | turbulent, adj., noisy                                | veiller, v.a., to watch ; v.n., to set up |
| traire, v.a., to milk  |   | vendange, s.f., vintage                   |
| traître, s.m., traitresse, s.f., traitor, traitress              | <b>U</b>  | vendanger, v.a., to gather the grapes     |
| tranchant, s.m. edge   | Ultra-libéral, adj., ultra-liberal                    | vendre, v.a., to sell                     |
| tranchée, s.f., trench, cutting                                  | ultra-mondain, adj., ultra-mundane                    | vendredi, s.m., Friday                    |
| trancher, v.a., to cut   | ultra-royaliste, adj., ultra-royalist                 | vengeance, s.f., vengeance                |
| tranquille, adj., tranquil                                       | ultra-zodiacal, adj., ultra-zodiacal                  | venger, v.a., to avenge                   |
| tranquillité, s.f., tranquillity                                 | un, -e, adj., and, subs., one                         | vengeur, s.m., avenger                    |
| travail, s.m., work  | un, -e, art.ind., a or an user, v.a., to wear out     | vengeur, -eresse, adj., avenging          |
| travailler, v.a.n., to work                                      | usure, s.f., wear and tear, usury                     | venir, v.n., to come                      |
| travailleur, s.m., labourer, workman, hard worker                | utile, adj., useful                                   | venue, s.f., coming                       |
| travaillense, s.f., work-woman, painstaking person (woman, girl) |   | verbe, s.m., verb                         |
| trentaine, s.f., about thirty                                    |   | verdir, v.n., to become green             |
| trente, adj.num., thirty   |   | véritable, adj., true                     |
| très, adv., very, very much                                      |   | vérité, s.f., truth                       |
| tringe, s.m., sorting  |   | vermeil, -le, adj., vermilion, ruddy      |
| tribun, s.m., tribune  |   | vermeil, s.m., silver-gilt                |
| tribunat, s.m., tribuneship                                      | Va, 3.p.p.ind. of aller (p. 112)                      | verre, s.m., glass                        |
| tribut, s.m., tribute  | vache, s.f., cow                                      | verrou, s.m., bolt                        |
| tricher, v.a., to cheat  | vacher, s.m., cow-keeper                              | vers, s.m., verse                         |
| tricheur, s.m., trickster, cheat                                 | vagabond, s.m., vagabond                              | verset, s.m., verse (in Scripture)        |
| trier, v.a., to sort   | vagabondage, s.m., vagrancy                           | vert, adj., green                         |
| triste, adj., sad  | vain, -e, adj., vain ; loc., en vain, in vain, vainly | vertu, s.f., virtue                       |
| tristesse, s.f., sadness   | vaincre, v.a., to conquer                             | vertueux, adj., virtuous                  |
| trivial, adj., trivial   | vainqueur, s.m., conqueror                            | vestiaire s.m., vestuary                  |
| trivialité, s.f., triviality                                     | vaisseau, s.m., ship, vessel                          | veux, v.a.n., ind.p. of vouloir (p. 124)  |
| tromper, v.a., to deceive  | valeur, s.f., value, valour                           | vexer, v.a., to vex                       |
| se tromper, v.r., to be mistaken, to make a mistake              | valoir, v.n., to be worth                             | viande, s.f., meat                        |
| trop, adv., too, too much, too many, too far, too long           | vanter, v.a., to praise                               | vice, s.m., vice                          |
| trou, s.m., hole   | vantard, -e, adj., boastful                           | vice-amiral, s.m., vice-admiral           |
|  | vapeur, s.f., vapour, steam                           | vice-président, s.m., vice-president      |
|  | varié, adj., varied                                   | vice-roi, s.m., vice-roy                  |
|  | variété, s.f., variety                                | vieux, vieil, vieille, adj., old          |
|  |   | vieillot, -te, adj., oldish               |

*s.m.*, vassal  
*ind. p. of valoir*,  
 worth  
*s.m.*, vegetable  
*f.*, watch  
*v.a.*, to watch;  
 to set up  
*s.f.*, vintage  
*v.a.*, to grape  
 the grapes  
*v.a.*, to sell  
*s.m.*, Friday  
*s.f.*, ven-  
 geance  
*v.a.*, to avenger  
*s.m.*, avenger  
*ressé*, *adj.*,  
 angry  
 to come  
 coming  
*v.*, verb  
*v.*, to become  
  
*adj.*, true  
 truth  
*le*, *adj.*, vermi-  
 lily  
*m.*, silver-gilt  
 glass  
*s.*, bolt-  
 verse  
*m.*, verse (in  
 e)  
 green  
 virtue  
*adj.*, virtuous  
*m.*, vestiar  
*n.*, *ind. p. of*  
 p. 124)  
 to vex  
 meat  
 vice  
*s.m.*, vice-  
 roval  
*s.m.*,  
 roval  
*s.*, vice-roy  
*vielle*, *adj.*,  
  
*adj.*, oldish

*vigne*, *s.f.*, vine  
*vigneron*, *s.m.*, vine-  
 dresser  
*vilain*, -e, *adj.*, ugly,  
 nasty, villanous  
*vin*, *s.m.*, wine  
*vingt*, *adj.num.*, twenty  
*vingtaine*, *s.f.*, about  
 twenty  
*violent*, -e, *adj.*, violent  
*visite*, *s.f.*, visit  
*vite*, *adj.*, quick, swift  
*vite*, *adv.*, quickly, swiftly,  
 fast  
*vitrail*, *s.m.*, stained  
 glass-window  
*vivre*, *v.n.*, to live  
*vœu*, *s.m.*, vow, wish  
*voici*, *adv.*, here is, here  
 are  
*voilà*, *adv.*, there is,  
 there are

*voiler*, *v.a.*, to veil  
*voilure*, *s.f.*, set of sails  
*voir*, *v.a.n.*, to see  
*voiture*, *s.f.*, carriage  
*volable*, *adj.*, 1. (persons)  
 to be robbed; 2.  
 (things) easily stolen  
*voler*, *v.a.*, to steal, to  
 rob  
*voler*, *v.n.*, to fly  
*volée*, *s.f.*, flight, volley  
*volet*, *s.m.*, shutter  
*voleur*, -euse, *s.m.f.*,  
 thief  
*volume*, *s.m.*, volume  
*voter*, *v.a.n.*, to vote  
*votre* (*pl. vos*), *adj.pos.*,  
 your, thy  
*vôtre* (*le, la*), *vôtres* (*les*),  
*pron.pos.*, yours  
*vouloir*, *v.a.*, will, to be  
 willing

*vous*, *pron.pers.*, you, to  
 you  
*voyage*, *s.m.*, travelling,  
 journey, voyage  
*voyageur*, *s.m.*, travel-  
 ler

## Y

*Y*, *adv.*, there, thither,  
 at home, within  
*y*, *pron.*, (things)it, them,  
 (pers.) him, her, them  
 (with the preposition  
 required by the verb)

## Z

*Zéro*, *s.m.*, nought, cypher  
*zone*, *s.f.*, zone



# ENGLISH-FRENCH VOCABULARY.

## A

A, *art.ind.*, un (m.), une  
 (f.)  
 abolish, *v.t.*, abolir  
 abominable, *adj.*, abomi-  
 nable  
 above, *prep.*, au-dessus  
 de, sur; above all,  
 surtout  
 absolve, *v.t.*, absoudre  
 accept, *v.t.*, accepter  
 accusation, *s.*, accusation  
 (f.)  
 act, *v.t.*, agir  
 admire, *v.t.*, admirer  
 advantage, *s.*, avantage  
 (m.)  
 advice, *s.*, avis (m.)  
 affair, *s.*, affaire (f.)  
 afflicted, *s.* and *adj.*,  
 affligé  
 again, *adv.*, de nouveau,  
 encore  
 agreement, *s.*, conven-  
 tion (f.)  
 aim, *v.intr.* (at), tendre  
 (à)  
 alarm, *v.t.*, alarmer  
 alarming, *adj.*, alarmant  
 Algeria, *s.*, Algérie (f.)  
 all, *adj.ind.*, tout, -e,  
 tous (m.pl.)  
 already, *adv.*, déjà  
 alter, *v.t.*, changer  
 although, *conj.*, quoique  
 always, *adv.*, toujours

amiable, *adj.*, aimable  
 ancestor, *s.*, ancêtre (m.),  
 aïeul (pl. aïeux)  
 and, *conj.*, et  
 another, *adj.ind.* un (e),  
 autre  
 answer, *v.t.*, répondre  
 answer, *s.*, réponse (f.)  
 anxiety, *s.*, inquiétude  
 (f.)  
 any, *adj.ind.*, tout, n'im-  
 porte lequel  
 applaud, *v.t.*, applaudir  
 apply, *v.int.*, s'appliquer  
 apprehend, *v.t.*, pressen-  
 tir  
 argument, *s.*, argument  
 (m.)  
 arm, *v.t.*, armer  
 army, *s.*, armée (f.)  
 arrive, *v.int.*, arriver  
 as, *prep.*, (for), quant (à)  
 as, *adv.*, comme, aussi;  
 as forward as they,  
 aussi avancé qu'eux  
 assault, *v.t.*, assaillir  
 assess, *v.t.*, répartir,  
 évaluer  
 attack, *v.t.*, attaquer  
 attention, *s.*, attention  
 (f.)  
 attentive, *adj.*, attentif.  
 aunt, *s.*, tante (f.)  
 avenging, *adj.*, vengeur,  
 -resse (m.f.)  
 avoid, *v.t.*, éviter

## B

Bad, *adj.*, mauvais, mé-  
 chant  
 bank-note, *s.*, billet de  
 banque (m.)  
 battle, *s.*, bataille (f.)  
 be, *v.aux.*, être (p. 75)  
 beautiful, *adj.*, beau, bcl  
 (m.), belle (f.)  
 because, *conj.*, parce que  
 become, *v.int.*, devenir  
 (v.t.), seoir (à)  
 bed, *s.*, lit (m.)  
 before, *prep.*, avant  
 behave, *v.int.*, se con-  
 duire  
 believe, *v.t.*, croire (p.  
 127)  
 bell, *s.*, cloche (f.)  
 belong, *v.int.*, appartenir.  
 bend, *v.t.*, fléchir  
 benefactor, *s.*, bienfai-  
 teur (m.)  
 benefactress, *s.*, bienfai-  
 trice (f.)  
 benevolent, *adj.*, bien-  
 faisant  
 best, *adj.sup.*, (the, my, le,  
 mon, etc.), meilleur  
 betray, *v.t.*, trahir  
 better, *adj.comp.*, meil-  
 leur  
 better, *adv.*, mieux  
 bill, *s.*, lettre de change (f.)  
 bird, *s.*, oiseau (m.)  
 bite, *v.t.*, mordre

blow  
 boa  
 li  
 boa  
 bon  
 booi  
 booi  
 bor  
 b  
 bott  
 bow  
 brai  
 brea  
 brea  
 brin  
 br  
 oc  
 ba  
 brot  
 bulle  
 burr  
 burr  
 burr  
 burr  
 bu  
 dr  
 but,  
 butt  
 buy,  
 by, z  
 Cake  
 call,  
 calur  
 camp  
 can,  
 cand  
 lie  
 care,  
 cargo  
 carri  
 castle  
 cat, s  
 catas  
 tro  
 anti  
 cellar  
 ceren  
 (f.)

Y.

B

mauvais, mé-

billet de

taille (*f.*)

re (p. 75)

beau, bel

(*f.*)

parce que

t., devenir

(*à*)

avant

se con-

croire (*p.*(*f.*)

appartenir

chir

bienfai-

s., bienfai-

adj., bien-

the, my, le,

meilleur

chair

vp., meil-

ieux

change (*f.*)(*m.*)

re

blow, *s.*, coup (*m.*)  
 boast, *v.int.*, s'enorgueillir, se vanter  
 boat, *s.*, bateau (*m.*)  
 bonnet, *s.*, chapeau (*m.*)  
 book, *s.*, livre (*m.*)  
 boot, *s.*, botte (*f.*)  
 born, *adj.*, né; to be born, naître  
 bottle, *s.*, bouteille (*f.*)  
 bow, *s.*, arc (*m.*)  
 branch, *s.*, branche (*f.*)  
 bread, *s.*, pain (*m.*)  
 break, *v.t.*, casser, rompre  
 breakfast, *v.int.*, déjeuner  
 bring, *v.t.*, apporter; to bring to confusion, confondre; to bring back, rapporter  
 brother, *s.*, frère (*m.*)  
 bullet, *s.*, balle (*f.*)  
 burn, *v.t.*, brûler  
 burst, *v.int.*, éclater; burst into tears, fondre en larmes  
 but, *conj.*, mais  
 button, *s.*, bouton (*m.*)  
 buy, *v.t.*, acheter  
 by, *prep.*, par, de, en

C

Cake, *s.*, gâteau (*m.*)  
 call, *v.t.*, appeler  
 calumniate, *v.t.*, calomnier  
 camp, *s.*, camp (*m.*)  
 can, *v.def.*, pouvoir  
 candlestick, *s.*, chandelier (*m.*)  
 care, *s.*, soin (*m.*)  
 cargo, *s.*, cargaison (*f.*)  
 carriage, *s.*, voiture (*f.*)  
 castle, *s.*, château (*m.*)  
 cat, *s.*, chat (*m.*)  
 catastrophe, *s.*, catastrophe (*f.*)  
 cautious, *adj.*, prudent  
 cellar, *s.*, cave (*f.*)  
 ceremony, *s.*, cérémonie (*f.*)

certainly, *adv.*, certainement  
 chair, *s.*, chaise (*f.*)  
 charming, *adj.*, charmant  
 cherish, *v.t.*, chérir  
 child, *s.*, enfant (*m.*)  
 choice, *s.*, choix (*m.*)  
 choose, *v.t.*, choisir  
 church, *s.*, église (*f.*)  
 circumstance, *s.*, circonstance (*f.*)  
 citadel, *s.*, citadelle (*f.*)  
 cloak, *s.*, manteau (*m.*); cloak-room, vestiaire (*m.*)  
 close, *v.t.*, fermer  
 cloth, *s.*, drap (*m.*)  
 clothe, *v.t.*, vêtir; one's self, se vêtir  
 coal, *s.*, charbon (*m.*)  
 coat, *s.*, habit (*m.*)  
 cold, *s.*, rhume (*m.*); to catch cold, s'enrhumer  
 collar, *s.*, col (*m.*)  
 collect, *v.t.*, percevoir  
 collection, *s.*, collection (*f.*)  
 colonel, *s.*, colonel (*m.*)  
 colour, *s.*, couleur (*f.*)  
 come, *v.int.*, venir; to come down, descendre  
 comfortable, *adj.*, commode  
 commerce, *s.*, commerce (*m.*)  
 commission, *s.*, commission (*f.*)  
 company, *s.*, compagnie, société (*f.*)  
 compassionate, *adj.*, compatissant  
 complain, *v.int.*, se plaindre  
 conceited, *adj.*, suffisant  
 conceive, *v.t.*, concevoir  
 concert, *s.*, concert (*m.*)  
 condemn, *v.t.*, condamner  
 conduct, *s.*, condite (*f.*)  
 confess, *v.t.*, avouer, confesser

confidence, *s.*, confiance (*f.*)  
 confound, *v.t.*, confondre  
 confusedly, *adv.*, confusément  
 conquer, *p.part.*, conquis  
 consecrate, *v.t.*, bénir  
 consent, *v.int.*, consentir  
 consent, *s.*, consentement (*m.*)  
 consequence, *s.*, conséquence (*f.*)  
 consider, *v.t.*, considérer, —as, regarder comme  
 consoler, *s.*, consolateur (*m.*)  
 contempt, *s.*, mépris (*m.*)  
 continual, *adj.*, continuuel, -le  
 correspond, *v.int.*, correspondre  
 cost, *v.int.*, coûter  
 country, *s.*, pays (*m.*), campagne (*f.*); country-house, maison de campagne; in the country, à la campagne  
 countrywoman, *s.*, paysanne (*f.*)  
 court, *s.*, cour (*f.*)  
 cousin, *s.*, cousin (*m.*)  
 cousin, *s.*, cousine (*f.*)  
 cow, *s.*, vache (*f.*)  
 criticize, *v.t.*, critiquer  
 cross, *v.t.*, traverser  
 crown, *s.*, couronne (*f.*)  
 cruel, *adj.*, cruel, -le  
 crystal, *s.*, cristal (*m.*); Crystal Palace, Palais de Cristal  
 cup, *s.*, tasse (*f.*)  
 curtain, *s.*, rideau (*m.*)  
 custom, *s.*, coutume (*f.*)

D

Danger, *s.*, danger (*m.*)  
 dangerous, *adj.*, dangereux, -se

day, *s.*, jour (*m.*); journée (*f.*)  
 deal, *s.*, quantité (*f.*); a great deal, beaucoup  
 dear, *adj.*, cher, (*adv.*) cher  
 death, *s.*, mort (*f.*)  
 deceive, *v.t.*, tromper  
 defeat, *v.t.*, défaire  
 defend, *v.t.*, défendre  
 delicious, *adj.*, délicieux  
 departure, *s.*, départ (*m.*)  
 depth, *s.*, profondeur (*f.*)  
 deserve, *v.t.*, mériter  
 design, *s.*, dessin (*m.*)  
 despair, *s.*, désespoir (*m.*)  
 detail, *s.*, détail (*m.*)  
 devote, *v.t.*, consacrer  
 dictionary, *s.*, dictionnaire (*m.*)  
 die, *v.int.*, mourir  
 difficult, *adj.*, difficile  
 difficulty, *s.*, difficulté (*f.*)  
 diligent, *adj.*, appliqué  
 dine, *v.int.*, dîner  
 dinner, *s.*, dîner (*m.*)  
 disappear, *v.int.*, disparaître  
 discharge, *v.t.*, accomplir  
 discouraged, *adj.part.*, découragé  
 discreet, *adj.*, discret  
 discuss, *v.t.*, discuter  
 disgrace, *v.t.*, déshonorer  
 disguise, *v.t.*, déguiser  
 disobey, *v.int.*, désobéir  
 disown, *v.int.*, disconvenir de  
 disposition, *s.*, disposition (*f.*)  
 distribute, *v.t.*, répartir  
 distrustful, *adj.*, méfiant  
 do, *v.t.*, faire (p. 129)  
 door, *s.*, porte (*f.*)  
 dozen, *s.coll.*, douzaine (*f.*)  
 drawer, *s.*, tiroir (*m.*)  
 drawing, *s.*, dessin (*m.*)

dream, *s.*, rêve (*m.*); idle dream, chimère (*f.*)  
 dress, *s.*, robe (*f.*)  
 drink, *v.t.*, boire  
 drive, *v.t.*, conduire, mener, pousser; to drive to despair, réduire au désespoir  
 dumb, *adj.*, muet  
 during, *pr.*, pendant  
 dust, *s.*, poussière (*f.*)  
 dust, *v.t.*, épousseter; to dust a coat, battre un habit  
 duty, *s.*, devoir (*m.*)

## E

Each, *adj.ind.*, chaque  
 each, *pr.ind.*, chacun  
 each other, l'un l'autre  
 early, *adv.*, de bonne heure; as early as, dès  
 eat, *v.t.*, manger  
 effort, *s.*, effort (*m.*)  
 either, *adj.* and *pr.*, l'un ou l'autre, l'une ou l'autre  
 embroider, *v.t.*, broder  
 end, *s.*, but (*m.*), fin (*f.*)  
 enemy, *s.*, ennemi (*m.*)  
 England, *s.p.*, Angleterre (*f.*)  
 engrave, *v.t.*, graver  
 engraving, *s.*, gravure (*f.*)  
 enjoy, *v.int.*, jouir de  
 enslave, *v.t.*, asservir  
 entreat, *v.t.*, supplier  
 envy, *s.*, envie (*f.*)  
 equal, *adj.*, égal  
 equivalent (to be) équivaloir  
 error, *s.*, erreur (*f.*)  
 essential, *adj.*, essentiel  
 establish, *v.t.*, établir  
 estate, *s.*, terre, (*f.*) propriété (*f.*)  
 event, *s.*, événement (*m.*)

## F

every, *adj.ind.*, chaque, tout; tous les; every body, tout le monde  
 everywhere, *adv.*, partout  
 examine, *v.*, (into) approfondir  
 excellent, *adj.*, excellent  
 exercise, *s.*, thème (*m.*)  
 expose, *v.t.*, dévoiler  
 extremely, *adv.*, extrêmement  
 eye, *s.*, œil (*m.*), (*pl.*) yeux; eye-glass, *s.*, lorgnon (*m.*)

Face, *s.*, face (*f.*), visage (*m.*), figure (*f.*)  
 fail, *v.int.*, faillir  
 faint, *v.int.*, (away) s'évanouir  
 fall, *s.*, chute (*f.*)  
 fall, *v.int.*, tomber; to fall due, échoir  
 false, *adj.*, faux (*m.*), fausse (*f.*)  
 fan, *s.*, éventail (*m.*)  
 far, *adv.*, loin  
 farm, *s.*, ferme (*f.*)  
 fatal, *adj.*, fatal  
 father, *s.*, père (*m.*)  
 favour, *s.*, faveur (*f.*)  
 favourite, *adj.*, favori (*m.*), *te* (*f.*)  
 fear, *s.*, crainte (*f.*)  
 fear, *v.t.*, craindre  
 feed, *v.t.* (on), se repaître de  
 fell, *v.t.*, abattre  
 field, *s.*, champ (*m.*)  
 fill, *v.t.*, remplir  
 find, *v.t.*, trouver  
 fine, *adj.*, beau, bel, belle  
 finish, *v.t.*, finir  
 fire, *s.*, feu (*m.*)  
 firm, *adj.*, ferme

fish, *s.*, poisson (*m.*)  
 flattering, *adj.*, flattereur  
 fleet, *s.*, flotte (*f.*)  
 flourish, *v. int.*, fleurir  
 flower, *s.*, fleur (*f.*);  
 flower-bed, planche (*f.*)  
 follow, *v.t.*, suivre  
 fond, *adj.*, cher  
 food, *s.*, nourriture (*f.*)  
 for, *prep.*, pour, à  
 forbid, *v.t.*, défendre  
 force, *s.*, force (*f.*)  
 foresee, *v.t.*, prévoir  
 forget, *v.t.*, oublier  
 fork, *s.*, fourchette (*f.*)  
 formerly, *adv.*, autrefois  
 forward, *adj.*, avancé  
 fox, *s.*, renard (*m.*)  
 franc, *s.*, franc (*m.*)  
 France, *s.*, France (*f.*)  
 French, *adj.*, français  
 frequent, *v.t.*, fréquenter  
 Friday, *s.*, vendredi (*m.*)  
 friend, *s.*, ami (*m.*), amie  
 (*f.*)  
 friendship, *s.*, amitié (*f.*)  
 from, *pr.*, de  
 fruit, *s.*, fruit (*m.*)  
 full, *adj.*, plein  
 future, *s.*, avenir (*m.*)

## G

Gain, *v.t.*, gagner  
 garden, *s.*, jardin (*m.*)  
 gardener, *s.*, jardinier  
 (*m.*)  
 general, *s.*, général (*m.*)  
 gentle, *adj.*, doux, -ce  
 gentleman, *s.*, monsieur  
 (*pl. messieurs*)  
 get (up), *v. int.*, se lever  
 give, *v.t.*, donner; to  
 give up, abandonner  
 glass, *s.*, verre (*m.*)  
 glove, *s.*, gant (*m.*)  
 go, *v. int.*, aller; go out,  
 sortir  
 God, *s.*, Dieu (*m.*)

good, *adj.*, bon, bonne  
 goods, *s.*, marchandises  
 (*sem. pl.*)  
 goose, *s.*, oie (*f.*)  
 government, *s.*, gouverne-  
 ment (*m.*)  
 grammar, *s.*, grammaire  
 (*f.*)  
 grandfather, *s.*, grand-  
 père, aieul (*m.*)  
 grape, *s.*, raisin (*m.*)  
 grass, *s.*, herbe (*f.*)  
 grateful, *adj.*, reconnais-  
 sant  
 great, *adj.*, grand  
 greatness, *s.*, grandeur  
 (*f.*)  
 Greek, *adj.*, grec, grecque  
 grief, *s.*, chagrin (*m.*)  
 grind, *v.t.*, mordre (a  
 knife) émoudre  
 grow, *v. int.*, croître  
 guilty, *s.* and *adj.*, coup-  
 pable  
 guinea, *s.*, guinée (*f.*)  
 gun, *s.*, fusil (*m.*)

## H

Hand, *s.*, main (*f.*)  
 hang, *v. int.*, pendre (up);  
 suspendre  
 happen, *v. int.*, arriver  
 happiness, *s.*, bonheur  
 (*m.*)  
 happy, *adj.*, heureux, -se  
 haste, *s.*, hâte (*f.*), to make  
 haste, se hâter  
 hasty, *adj.*, emporté  
 hat, *s.*, chapeau (*m.*)  
 hate, *v.t.*, haïr  
 he, *pr. pers.*, il; lui; ce-  
 lui  
 health, *s.*, santé (*f.*)  
 hear, *v.t.*, entendre  
 heart, *s.*, cœur (*m.*)  
 heat, *s.*, chaleur (*f.*)  
 heaven, *s.*, ciel (*m.*)  
 heavy, *adj.*, pesant, lourd

her, *pr. pers.*, elle, la, lui  
 à elle; hers (*pr. poss.*)  
 le sien, la sienne, les  
 siens, les siennes; à  
 elle (*adj.*) son, sa, ses  
 here, *adv.*, ici  
 him, *pr. pr.*, le, lui, celui;  
 himself, *se*, lui-  
 même, lui  
 his, *adj. poss.*, son, sa, ses  
 his, *pr. poss.*, le sien, la  
 sienne; les siens,  
 les siennes; *pr. pers.*  
 à lui, de lui  
 history, *s.*, histoire (*f.*)  
 holiday, *s.*, congé (*m.*)  
 honest, *adj.*, honnête  
 honourably, *adv.*, honora-  
 blement  
 hope, *s.*, espérance (*f.*)  
 horse, *s.*, cheval (*m.*)  
 house, *s.*, maison (*f.*)  
 how, *adv.*, comment;  
 how much, combien  
 humade, *adj.*, humain  
 hundred, *adj. num.*, cent  
 hungry, *adj.*, affamé; to  
 be—, avoir faim  
 hurt, *v.t.*, blesser  
 hypocrite, *s.*, hypocrite  
 (*m.*)

## I

I, *pr. pers.*, je, moi (*m. f.*)  
 ice, *s.*, glace (*f.*)  
 idea, *s.*, idée (*f.*)  
 if, *conj.*, si  
 ill, *adj.*, malade  
 importance, *s.*, impor-  
 tance (*f.*)  
 immediately, *adv.*, im-  
 médiatement  
 impossible, *adj.*, impossi-  
 ble  
 in, *pr.*, dans, en, à  
 inconsiderate, *adj.*, indis-  
 cret  
 industrious, *adj.*, labo-  
 rieux

infirm, *adj.*, infirmé  
 infirmity, *s.*, infirmité  
 (*f.*)  
 infringe, *v.t.*, enfreindre  
 inhabit, *v.t.*, habiter  
 inkstand, *s.*, Encrier (*m.*)  
 insult, *s.*, insulte (*f.*)  
 interest, *s.*, intérêt (*m.*)  
 intrenchment, *s.* re-  
 tranchement (*m.*)  
 invade, *v.t.*, envahir  
 it, *pr. nom.*, il, elle; (*acc.*)  
 le, la; (*dat.*) lui (*m.f.*);  
 (*imp.*) il, ce

## J

January, *s.*, janvier (*m.*)  
 jealous, *adj.*, jaloux, -se  
 jewel, *s.*, bijou (*m.*)  
 join, *v.t.*, joindre  
 journal, *s.*, journal (*m.*)  
 judge, *s.*, juge (*m.*)  
 justice, *s.*, justice (*f.*)

## K

Keep, *v.t.*, garder, tenir,  
 conserver  
 kill, *v.t.*, tuer  
 kind, *adj.*, bon, bonne  
 kindness, *s.*, bonté (*f.*)  
 king, *s.*, roi (*m.*)  
 knife, *s.*, couteau (*m.*)  
 know, *v.t.*, savoir, con-  
 naître

## L

Ladder, *s.*, échelle (*f.*)  
 lady, *s.*, dame (*f.*); young  
 lady, demoiselle (*f.*)  
 lamp, *s.*, lampe (*f.*)  
 landscape, *s.*, paysage  
 (*m.*)  
 large, *adj.*, grand  
 last, *adj.*, dernier

late, *adj.*, en retard  
 lately, *adv.*, dernière-  
 ment  
 laugh, *v.int.*, rire;—at,  
 se moquer de  
 law, *s.*, loi (*f.*)  
 learned, *adj.*, instruit,  
 savant  
 lease, *s.*, bail (*m.*), (*pl.*)  
 , baux  
 least, *adj. s.*, moindre,  
 plus petit  
 least, *adv.*, moins; at  
 least; au moins, du  
 moins  
 less, *adj. c.*, moindre, plus  
 petit  
 less, *adv.*, moins  
 leg, *s.* (of mutton), gigot  
 (*m.*)  
 legal, *adj.*, légal  
 leisure, *s.*, loisir (*m.*)  
 lemon, *s.*, citron (*m.*)  
 lesson, *s.*, leçon (*f.*)  
 letter, *s.*, lettre (*f.*)  
 liable, *adj.*, sujet  
 library, *s.*, bibliothèque  
 (*f.*); circulating library,  
 cabinet de lecture (*m.*)  
 lie, *v. int.*, gésir  
 like, *v. tr.*, aimer  
 like, *adj.*, pareil, sembla-  
 ble, tel; like master,  
 like man, tel maître,  
 tel valet.  
 little, *adj.*, petit, (*adv.*)  
 peu  
 linen, *s.*, linge (*m.*)  
 live, *v. int.*, vivre; de-  
 meurer  
 long, *adj.*, long; all day  
 long, toute la jour-  
 née  
 lose, *v.t.*, perdre; to lose  
 one's self, s'égarer  
 loss, *s.*, perte (*f.*)  
 love, *v.t.*, aimer  
 loyal, *adj.*, loyal  
 luck, *s.*, bonheur (*m.*)

## M

Machine, *s.*, machine (*f.*)  
 magnificent, *adj.*, ma-  
 gnifique  
 make, *v.t.*, faire; to make  
 happy, rendre heureux  
 man, *s.*, homme (*m.*)  
 many, *adj. ind.*, plu-  
 sieurs beaucoup (*de*);  
 bien (*des*); many a  
 time, maintes fois  
 marriage, *s.*, mariage (*m.*)  
 master, *s.*, maître (*m.*)  
 mayor, *s.*, maire (*m.*)  
 means, *s.*, moyen (*m.*)  
 meat, *s.*, viande (*f.*)  
 meet, *v. t.*, rencontrer;  
 (*ref.*) se rencontrer  
 meeting, *s.*, rencontre (*f.*),  
 séance (*f.*)  
 melt, *v.t.*, fondre  
 mend, *v. t.*, réformer  
 merchant, *s.*, marchand  
 (*m.*)  
 merit, *s.*, mérite (*m.*)  
 merry, *adj.*, gai  
 mild, *adj.*, doux  
 milk, *v. t.*, traire  
 mind, *s.*, esprit; to make  
 up one's mind, se  
 décider  
 mine, *pr. poss.*, le mien,  
 la mienne, les miens,  
 les miennes, à moi  
 my, *adj. poss.*, mon, ma,  
 mes  
 minister, *s.*, ministre (*m.*)  
 minute, *s.*, minute (*f.*)  
 misfortune, *s.*, malheur  
 (*m.*)  
 mistake, *s.*, faute (*f.*);  
 erreur (*f.*); to make  
 a mistake, se tromper  
 moderate, *adj.*, modéré  
 money, *s.*, argent (*m.*)  
 month, *s.*, mois (*m.*)  
 moral, *adj.*, moral  
 more, *adv.*, plus  
 morning, *s.*, matin (*m.*)

morrow, *s.*, demain; le  
lendemain; (*adv.*) to-  
morrow, demain  
mother, *s.*, mère (*f.*)  
move, *v. t.*, mouvoir,  
émouvoir  
mouse, *s.*, souris (*f.*)  
much, *adv.*, beaucoup,  
bien; too much,  
trop  
murder, *v.t.*, massacrer  
museum, *s.*, musée (*m.*)  
music, *s.*, musique (*f.*)  
must, *v.n.def.*, falloir  
mutton, *s.*, mouton (*m.*)

## N

Nation, *s.*, nation (*f.*)  
nature, *s.*, nature (*f.*)  
near, *prep.*, près de  
necessary, *adj.*, néces-  
saire; to be necessary,  
falloir  
needle, *s.*, aiguille (*f.*)  
neglect, *v.t.*, négliger  
negotiate, *v.t.*, négocier  
neither, *adj.* and *pr.*, ni  
l'un ni l'autre, ni l'une  
ni l'autre  
neither, *conj.*, ni  
never, *adv.*, ne . . . ja-  
mais  
new, *adj.*, neuf, -ve, nou-  
veau, nouvel, -le  
news, *s.*, nouvelle (*f.*)  
no, *adv.*, ne pas . . . de, nul,  
ne . . . aucun, pas un, ne  
pas or point  
no, *adv.*, non, ne . . . pas  
none, *pr. pers.*, nul,  
aucun, pas un, per-  
sonne ne  
nor, *conj.*, ni  
nosogay, *s.*, bouquet  
(*m.*)  
not, *adv.*, ne . . . pas, ne . .  
point, non, pas  
note, *s.*, billet (*m.*)

nothing, *s.pr.*, rien;  
good-for-nothing, bon  
à rien  
notice, *v.t.*, remarquer  
nut, *s.*, noisette (*f.*)

## O

Oar, *s.*, rame (*f.*)  
obedient, *adj.*, obéis-  
sant  
obey, *v.t.*; obéir  
oblige, *v.t.*, obliger  
observe, *v.t.*, observer  
obstinate, *adj.*, obstiné  
obstinately, *adv.*, opi-  
niâtement  
obtain, *v.t.*, obtenir  
of, *pr.*, de  
offence, *s.*, offense (*f.*)  
offend, *v.t.*, offenser; to  
be offended, s'offenser  
offensive, *adj.*, offensant  
offer, *s.*, offre (*f.*)  
office, *s.*, bureau (*m.*)  
officer, *s.*, officier (*m.*)  
often, *adv.*, souvent  
old, *adj.*, vieux, vieil,  
vieille, ancienne, an-  
cienne; old man,  
vieillard, *s.m.*  
on, *pr.*, sur  
one, *adj.* and *s.*, un, (*pr.*)  
on, se, soi, en  
open, *v.t.*, ouvrir; open  
again, rouvrir; half-  
open, entr'ouvrir  
opinion, *s.*, opinion (*f.*)  
orchard, *s.*, verger (*m.*)  
order, *v.t.*, commander  
original, *adj.*, original  
other, *pr.ind.*, autre, *pl.*  
autres, d'autres, au-  
trui  
other, *adj.*, autre  
our, *adj.poss.*, notre, nos  
ours, *pr.poss.*, le nôtre,  
la nôtre, les nôtres, à  
nous

ourselves, *pr.pl.*, nous-  
mêmes, nous  
out, *pr.*, hors  
over, *pr.*, sur  
owe, *v.t.*, devoir; owe  
again, redevoir  
owl, *s.*, hibou (*m.*)  
own, *adj.*, propre

## P

Pair, *s.*, paire (*f.*)  
palace, *s.*, palais (*m.*)  
paper, *s.*, papier (*m.*)  
pardon, *v.pl.*, pardonner  
(à)  
parents, *s.*, parents  
(*m.pl.*)  
Paris, *s.pr.*, Paris (*m.*)  
parish, *s.*, paroisse (*f.*)  
parish, *adj.*, paroissial, -e,  
communal; parish  
school, école com-  
munale  
park, *s.*, parc (*m.*)  
party, *s.*, parti (*m.*)  
pass, *v.int.*, passer  
past, *prep.*, au delà de;  
it is past six, il est  
six heures passées;  
half-past two, deux  
heures et demie  
path, *s.*, chemin (*m.*)  
patient, *s.*, malade (*m.f.*)  
pear, *s.*, poire (*f.*)  
pen, *s.*, plume (*f.*)  
pettife, *s.*, canif (*m.*)  
perceive, *v.t.*, apercevoir  
(*act.*), s'apercevoir de  
(*ref.*)  
perform, *v.t.*, s'acquitter  
de  
perish, *v.int.*, périr  
perseverance, *s.*, persé-  
vérance (*f.*)  
person, *s.*, personne (*f.*)  
pickle, *v.t.*, confire  
picture, *s.*, tableau (*m.*)  
picco, *s.*, morceau (*m.*)

pistol, *s.*, pistolet (*m.*)  
 pity, *v.t.*, plaindre  
 place, *s.*, place (*f.*)  
 plan, *s.*, plan (*m.*)  
 play, *v.int.*, jouer  
 play, *s.*, comédie (*f.*)  
 please, *v.int.*, plaire  
 pleased, *adj.*, content  
 pleasure, *s.*, plaisir (*m.*)  
 plot, *s.*, complet (*m.*)  
 poem, *s.*, poème (*m.*)  
 poet, *s.*, poète (*m.*)  
 polish, *v.t.*, polir  
 politeness, *s.*, politesse (*f.*)  
 poor, *adj.*, pauvre; the  
 poor, les pauvres (*m.*)  
 pond, *s.*, étang (*m.*)  
 pope, *s.*, pape (*m.*); Pope  
 Sixtus Quintus, le  
 Pape Sixte-Quint  
 possession, *s.*, posses-  
 sion (*f.*); to take pos-  
 session, s'emparer de  
 postpone, *v.t.*, différer  
 praise, *v.t.*, louer  
 prefer, *v.t.*, préférer  
 pretend, *v.t.*, feindre  
 pretty, *adj.*, joli  
 prevail, *v.t.*, prévaloir  
 priest, *s.*, prêtre (*m.*)  
 princess, *s.*, princesse (*f.*)  
 principal, *adj.*, principal  
 print, *v.t.*, imprimer  
 printer, *s.*, imprimeur (*m.*)  
 proposal, *s.*, proposition  
 (*f.*)  
 propose, *v.t.*, proposer  
 protect, *v.t.*, protéger  
 protest, *s.*, protestant (*m.*)  
 provide, *v.int.*, pourvoir  
 (for...à)  
 provided, *conj.*, pourvu  
 que  
 prudent, *adj.*, prudent  
 punish, *v.t.*, punir  
 punishment, *s.*, punition  
 (*f.*)  
 pupil, *s.*, élève (*m.*)  
 put, *v.t.*, placer, mettre;  
 put out, éteindre

## Q

Quality, *s.*, qualité (*f.*)  
 queen, *s.*, reine (*f.*)  
 question, *s.*, question (*f.*)  
 quiet, *adj.*, tranquille  
 quire, *s.*, main (*f.*)  
 quite, *adv.*, tout-à-fait,  
 tout, -t

## R

Railway, *s.*, chemin de  
 fer (*m.*)  
 rain, *v.imp.*, pleuvoir  
 read, *v.t.*, lire, (*past part.*,  
 lu)  
 ready, *adj.*, prêt  
 reason, *s.*, raison (*f.*)  
 rebel, *s.*, rebelle (*m.*)  
 recast, *v.t.*, refondre  
 receive, *v.t.*, recevoir  
 recompense, *v.t.*, récom-  
 penser  
 red, *adj.*, rouge; red  
 (head of) hair, cheve-  
 lure rousse  
 reflect, *v.int.*, (on), réfléchir  
 (*à*)  
 regularly, *adv.*, réguliè-  
 rement  
 reign, *s.*, règne (*m.*)  
 rejoice, *v.int.*, se réjouir  
 (de)  
 relate, *v.t.*, raconter  
 remain, *v.int.*, rester  
 remember, *v.*, se rappel-  
 ler, se souvenir de  
 reputation, *s.*, réputation  
 (*f.*)  
 request, *v.t.*, requérir  
 resell, *v.t.*, revendre  
 reserve, *v.t.*, réserver  
 resolve, *v.t.*, se résoudre à  
 resound, *v.t.*, retentir  
 retract, *v.t.*, se rétracter  
 return, *v.t.*, rendre  
 review, *s.*, revue (*f.*)  
 reward, *s.*, récompense  
 (*f.*)

rich, *adj.*, riche  
 ridiculous, *adj.*, ridicule  
 right, *adj.*, juste  
 ripe, *adj.*, mûr  
 rise, *v.int.*, (in price),  
 enchérir  
 river, *s.*, rivière (*f.*)  
 roast, *v.t.*, rôtir  
 room, *s.*, salle (*f.*),  
 chambre (*f.*)  
 root, *s.*, racine (*f.*)  
 rope, *s.*, corde (*f.*)  
 royal, *adj.*, royal  
 ruddy, *adj.*, rouge  
 rule, *s.*, règle (*f.*)  
 rumour, *s.*, bruit (*m.*)  
 rush, *v.int.*, se précipiter

## S

Sail, *v.t.*, mettre à la voile,  
 appareiller, partir  
 sailor, *s.*, marin (*m.*)  
 same, *adj.*, même  
 sarcastic, *adj.*, moqueur,  
 -se  
 satisfy, *v.t.*, satisfaire  
 (*irr.*)  
 say, *v.t.*, dire (p. 128)  
 scarf, *s.*, écharpe (*f.*)  
 scatter, *v.t.*, répandre  
 school, *s.*, école (*f.*)  
 schoolmaster, *s.*, maître  
 d'école (*m.*)  
 scold, *v.t.*, gronder  
 scribbler, *s.*, écrivassier  
 (*m.*)  
 seal, *v.t.*, cacheter  
 see, *v.t.*, voir (*irr.*)  
 seem, *v.t.*, paraître (*irr.*)  
 sell, *v.t.*, vendre  
 send, *v.t.*, envoyer  
 sense, *s.*, sentiment (*m.*)  
 servant, *s.*, domestique  
 (*m.*)  
 serve, *v.t.*, servir (*irr.*)  
 several, *adj. ind.*, plu-  
 sieurs  
 severely, *adv.*, sévèrement  
 sew, *v.t.* (on), coudre



share, *s.*, part (*f.*), ac-  
tion (*f.*)  
she, *pr. p. f.*, elle  
shear, *v.t.*, tondre  
sheep, *s.*, brebis (*f.*)  
shilling, *s.*, shelling (*m.*)  
ship, *s.*, vaisseau (*m.*)  
shirt, *s.*, chemise (*f.*)  
shoe, *s.*, soulier (*m.*)  
shore, *s.*, rivage (*m.*)  
show, *v.t.*, montrer  
shut, *v.t.*, fermer  
shutter, *s.*, volet (*m.*)  
sincere, *adj.*, sincère  
sing, *v.t.*, chanter  
sister, *s.*, sœur (*f.*)  
sit, *v.i.*, sit down, s'asseoir  
situation, *s.*, situation (*f.*)  
skate, *s.*, patin (*m.*)  
slave, *s.*, esclave (*m. f.*)  
sleep, *v.t.*, dormir (*irr.*)  
small, *adj.*, petit  
smile, *v.t.*, sourire  
smooth, *v.t.*, aplanir  
so, *adv.*, aussi; so... (as),  
aussi, si; autant, tant  
(que)  
society, *s.*, société (*f.*)  
soften, *v.t.*, adoucir  
soldier, *s.*, soldat (*m.*)  
some, *art.*, du, de la, des  
some, *adj.*, quelque  
some, *pr.*, quelques-uns,  
quelques-unes, en  
son, *s.*, fils (*m.*)  
sorrowful, *adj.*, chagrin  
sound, *adj.*, a sound ad-  
vice, un avis salutaire  
spacious, *adj.*, spacieux,  
-se  
Spain, *s. pr.*, l'Espagne (*f.*)  
speak, *v.t.*, parler  
speech, *s.*, discours (*m.*)  
spend, *v.t.*, dépenser  
splendor, *s.*, splendeur (*f.*)  
split, *v.t.*, fendre  
sport, *s.*, jeu (*m.*)  
spring, *s.*, ressort (*m.*)  
spur, *s.*, éperon (*m.*)  
stain, *s.*, tache (*f.*)

staircase, *s.*, escalier (*m.*)  
start, *v. int.*, tressaillir  
(with...de)  
steady, *adj.*, posé  
steal, *v.t.*, voler — away  
(*v.i.*) s'esquiver  
steeple, *s.*, clocher (*m.*)  
stocking, *s.*, bas (*m.*)  
street, *s.*, rue (*f.*)  
strengthen, *v.t.*, affermir,  
fortifier  
stretch, *v.t.*, étendre  
strike, *v.t.*, atteindre  
studious, *adj.*, studieux,  
-se  
stupid, *adj.*, stupide  
subscribe, *v.i.*, s'abonner  
succeed, *v.t.*, réussir  
success, *s.*, succès (*m.*)  
such, *adj.*, tel, telle  
suddenly, *adv.*, soudaine-  
ment  
suffer, *v.t.*, souffrir  
sully, *v.t.*, ternir  
sum, *s.*, somme (*f.*)  
supply, *v.t.*, fournir  
suppose, *v.t.*, supposer  
supreme, *adj.*, suprême  
surprised, *pr. and adj.*,  
surpris (at...de)  
suspect, *v.t.*, soupçonner  
suspend, *v.t.*, suspendre  
sweep, *v.t.*, balayer  
sweet, *adj.*, doux, douce  
sword, *s.*, épée (*f.*)

## T

Table, *s.*, table (*f.*)  
take, *v.t.*, prendre; take  
-back, reprendre; (some-  
body in a carriage) re-  
conduire  
talent, *s.*, talent (*m.*)  
tax, *s.*, impôt (*m.*)  
tea, *s.*, thé (*m.*)  
tea-pot, *s.*, théière (*f.*)  
tear, *v.t.*, déchirer  
tear, *s.*, larme (*f.*)  
tedious, *adj.*, ennuyeux, -se

telegram, *s.*, télégramme  
(*m.*)  
tell, *v.t.*, dire  
temper, *s.*, caractère (*m.*)  
than, *conj.*, quo, de  
thanks, *s.*, remerciement  
(*m.*)  
that, *adj. dem.*, ce, cet,  
cette, ces  
that, *pr. dem.*, celui-là,  
celle-là, cela, ça, le  
that, *pr. rel.*, (*nom.*) qui;  
(*acc.*) que, lequel, la-  
quelle, lesquels, les-  
quelles  
that, *conj.*, que, afin que;  
in order that, afin que  
the, *art.*, le, la, les  
their, *adj. poss.*, leur,  
leurs  
theirs, *pr. poss.*, le leur,  
la leur, les leurs, à eux,  
à elles  
themselves, *pr. pers.*, se,  
eux - mêmes, elles -  
mêmes, mêmes  
there, *adv.*, là, y  
they, *pr. pers. (subj.)* ils,  
elles; (when alone) eux,  
elles; they who, ceux  
(*m.*), celles (*f.*) qui  
thick, *adj.*, épais, épaisse  
thine, *pr. pers.*, le tien,  
la tienne, les tiens, les  
tiennes, à toi  
thing, *s.*, chose (*f.*);  
everything, tout  
think, *v. int.*, croire,  
penser  
this, *adj. dem.*, ce, cet  
(*m.*), cette (*f.*)  
thoroughly, *adv.*, com-  
plètement  
thou, *pr. p. 2 pers.*, tu, toi  
thought, *s.*, pensée (*f.*);  
to collect one's  
thoughts, se recueillir  
threaten, *v.t.*, menacer  
three, *adj. num. card.*,  
trois



through, *pr.*, à travers  
thunder, *s.*, tonnerre (*m.*)  
thunderstorm, *s.*, orage (*m.*)  
thy, *adj. poss.*, ton, ta, tes  
ticket, *s.*, billet (*m.*)  
tiger, *s.*, tigre (*m.*)  
time, *s.*, temps (*m.*)  
timid, *adj.*, timide  
to, *pr.*, à  
together, *adv.*, ensemble  
too, *adv.*, trop  
torment, *v.t.*, tourmenter; torment one's self, se tourmenter  
towards, *pr.*, 'envers, vers

town, *s.*, ville (*f.*)  
toy, *s.*, joujou (*m.*)  
train, *s.*, train (*m.*)  
translate, *v.t.*, traduire  
treachery, *s.*, trahison (*f.*)  
treatise, *s.*, traité (*m.*)  
tree, *s.*, arbre (*m.*)  
tribute, *s.*, tribut (*m.*)  
trifling, *adj.*, léger  
troop, *s.*, troupe (*f.*)  
trunk, *s.*, malle (*f.*)  
trone (*m.*)  
trust, *v.t.*, se fier à  
truth, *s.*, vérité (*f.*)  
tune (in), *loc.*, juste  
Turkish, *adj.*, turo, turque  
two, *adj. num.*, deux

## U

Undeceive, *v.t.*, dé-tromper; undeceive one's self, se dé-tromper  
under, *pr.*, sous  
undergo, *v.t.*, subir  
understand, *v.t.*, com-prendre

undertaking, *s.*, entre-prise (*f.*)  
unfeeling, *adj.*, insensible  
unfurnish, *v.t.*, dégarnir  
ungrateful, *adj.*, ingrat  
unless, *conj.*, à moins que  
unpolite, *adj.*, impoli  
unravel, *v.t.*, débrouiller  
unwell, *adj.*, indisposé, souffrant  
use, *s.*, usage (*m.*)  
useful, *adj.*, utile  
uselessly, *adv.*, en vain, inutilement

## V

Vegetable, *s.*, légume (*m.*)  
very, *adv.*, très  
village, *s.*, village (*m.*)  
vinegar, *s.*, vinaigre (*m.*)  
virtuous, *adj.*, vertueux, -se  
visit, *v.t.*, visiter  
voice, *s.*, voix (*f.*)

## W

Wait, *v.*, attendre  
walk, *v. int.*, marcher  
walking, *s.*, marche (*f.*), promenade (*f.*); walking-stick, *s.*, canne  
want, *s.*, besoin (*m.*)  
warm (a bed), *v.t.*, bas-siner  
warn, *v.t.*, avertir  
warrior, *s.*, guerrier (*m.*)  
watch, *s.*, montre (*f.*)  
watch, *v.*, surveiller  
water, *s.*, eau (*f.*)  
water, *v.t.*, arroser  
way, *s.*, chemin (*m.*)  
we, *pr. pers.*, nous  
weak, *adj.*, faible  
week, *s.*, semaine (*f.*)

weep, *v.t.*, pleurer  
well, *adv.*, bien  
what, *pr. rel.*, ce qui, ce que, qui, que  
what, *pr. adj.*, quel  
what, *pr. int.*, que, quoi  
what? *adj. int.*, quel, lequel?  
when, *adv.*, quand  
whence, *adv.*, d'où  
whereas, *conj.*, tandis que  
whether, *conj.*, si; soit que... ou; que... ou  
which, *pr. rel.*, 1. qui, que, lequel, laquelle; 2. ce qui, ce que; 3. (*int.*) qui, lequel, laquelle? 4. ce, cette, etc.

whimsical, *adj.*, capricieux, -se  
whip, *s.*, fouet (*m.*)  
who, *pr. pers.*, 1. qui, lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles; 2. quel; 3. (*int.*) qui? 4. celui qui  
whoever, *pr. ind.*, qui-conque  
whom, *pr. obj.*, que, qui, (*int.*) qui?  
wicked, *adj.*, méchant  
wide, *adj.*, large  
wilderness, *s.*, désert (*m.*)  
win, *v.t.*, gagner  
window, *s.*, fenêtre (*f.*)  
wine, *s.*, vin (*m.*)  
wing, *s.*, aile (*f.*)  
wise, *adj.*, sage  
wish, *v.t.*, désirer  
with, *pr.*, avec  
withdraw, *v.t.*, se dédire de  
wither, *v. int.*, flétrir  
without, *pr.*, sans  
woman, *s.*, femme (*f.*)  
wonderful, *adj.*, merveilleux, -se  
wonderfully, *adv.*, merveilleusement

wood, *s.*, bois (*m.*)  
 word, *s.*, parole (*f.*)  
 work, *s.*, ouvrage, travail ; work-box, *s.*, boîte (*f.*) à ouvrage  
 work, *v.t.*, travailler  
 worship, *v.t.*, adorer  
 worth (to be), valoir (*v.i.*)  
 wound, *v.t.*, blesser  
 wring, *v.t.*, tordre  
 write, *v.t.*, écrire

Y

Year, *s.*, an (*m.*), année (*f.*)  
 yesterday, *adv.*, hier  
 yet, *adv.*, encore  
 yield, *v.int.*, céder, se rendre (à)  
 you, *pr.pers.*, vous  
 young, *adj.*, jeune  
 your, *adj.poss.*, votre, vos

yours, *pr.poss.*, le vôtre, la vôtre, les vôtres, à vous  
 yourself, *pr.pers.*, vous-même, vous

Z

Zeal, *s.*, zèle (*m.*)

